THI

HISTORY

TOM YONES

SYFIGH BOT

STAY2 STS1, SFEET)

Chapter Communicated to the Communicated to th



THE

HISTORY

OF

TOM JONES

THE

FOUNDLING,

INHIS

MARRIED STATE.

- Utile dulci.

The SECOND EDITION Corrected,

With an additional Chapter, communicated to the Author by Mr. Allworthy, &c. concerning Plays, and the FRENCH STROLERS in Particular.

LONDON:

Printed for J. ROBINSON, at the Golden-Lion in Ludgate-Street.

Mocci.

BHT

VALOTE TH

1 ()

ATATE GHARAGE



TOTHE

RIGHT HONOURABLE

ELIZABETH,

Counters of MARCHMONT;

THIS

HISTORY

IS

Most humbly inscribed

BYTHE

AUTHOR.

ELIZIAEETH. PokuEothiAuGot.

H.E. Author Stouis feares some is necessary to remove the Reader waste L. T. W. W. W. L. W. R. Linkers

lick, or et dry d**olkk**ar concernal in di Consequena et Pargration

Mon bumbly inforibed

hapasangan aliminy para ta apa tauta

and the auditoria was now in the action of the

THE TAX E AND THE STATE OF THE

ADITUA.

-manifecture of the state of th

on our weaders out of the common hand

and the against the many and

cente, it was with an Intention to

PREFACE.

HE Author should scarce think it necessary to trouble the Reader with a Preface, was it not his Intention that the World should be satisfied that Henry Fielding, Esq; is not the Author of this Book, nor in any Manner concerned in its Composition or Publication.

FOR, as to the Work itself; though it cannot boast of being warmly recommended by an bonourable Lord of the Treasury, BEFORE it appears in Public, the Author's Station of Life, setting him at too great a Distance from Court, where such a Patronage is to be sought; yet he hopes the Subjects contained therein will be found so interesting, in the most useful Parts of Life, among all Degrees, as to engage the warm Recommendation, not only of That Gentleman, but of All serious and well-meaning Readers.

IF

IF he has stepped out of the common Road of Historians, it was with an Intention to draw Nature more to the Life; and to gather proper Antidotes against the many and common Vices of the Age. And where he has been obliged to descend to Particulars, he has neither used a luscious nor ambiguous Diction: It being as necessary to guard the Reader from the Poison of Words, as from the Vice they seem to conceat; a Caution too seldom regarded by those who pretend to write to please the Taste of the Times. Which cannot, by any Means, be accounted a Compliment to their Readers.—

HE has only introduced such Characters as both Young and Old frequently meet with, or may observe at a Distance; so that they may not only amuse, but conduct the Reader thromany otherwise difficult Cases. In sine, these Sheets may be justly stiled an Admonition to the unthinking Part of both Sexes; and a Guide to preserve the most Virtuous, against the Delusions and false Appearances, which mix so frequently in the Transactions of Life.

d 5

common Road A H. Till tou Indivine Brook Broke W. J. John Co. CHAP. I. Containing Some Reflections on Marriage Page r CHAP. IL Containing the Characters of the principal Persons already mentioned; with Some Remarks on Taste CHAPIII. What happened on the second Day after Mr. Jones's Marriage with Sophia P. 13 CHAP. IV. Lady Bellaston's Vifit to the new married Couple

CHAP. V. Mr. Jones carries bis Lady to a Play p. 31

p. 25

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VI.

The Misinterpretation of Mr. Jones's Kindness to Mr. Blist

CHAP. VII.

Mrs. Honour instructed, and sent to tender ber Service to Mad. Sophia p. 46

N

Enter C. H. A. P. VIII. Autory

The Art of Dissimulation p. 52

CHAP. IX.

Mr. Allworthy's Discourse at Breakfast, on Party-Lying, Libels, Lampoons, &c. p. 55

CHAP X

Mrs. Honour receives ber Instructions from Lady Bellaston and Mrs. Western p. 60

CHAP. XI.

Lord Fellamar's Engagements with Lady Bellaston p. 63

CHAP. XII.

Mr. Jones burried away to Prison, and bis Discharge p. 69

B O O K

CONTENTS.

BOOK II.

The Military Leading of the State of

100			-	2 MART 2 3-4
D ESCHOOL			100 Pr 1977	12311111
Kalen	пагк	Son	観ぎ打り	elling
7 500	****		Street Street	

neither becker A P. 11. Mario 10

What passed in Town after Mr. Jones's Discharge, and his Journey to Portsmouth p. 78

A Night's Conversation among the Lap. 89 dies

CHAP. IV.

Remarks on a Spithead Expedition p. 99

CHAP. V.

A strange Adventure between Portsmouth and Salisbury p. 111

CHAP. VI.

Profitable. Reflections taken from the Discontent of married People p. 140

CHAP. VII.

Strange Discoveries made at Salisbury p. 144 CHAP.

CONTENTS

CHAP VIII

The History of Euphemia p. 156

the ridge of Co. H. Wubing Ixas squepup

Of Censure, Scandal, and Defamation p. 176

W Different Work A H. Deg to kerthe

An Adventure at the Assembly, worthy of your Attention p. 182

CHAP. XI.

The Conversation of two Hours: with Observations on Modesty and Whoring p. 192

CHAP. XH.

The Chat at Breakfast, containing Characters, and Observations on Ingratitude p. 204

BOOK! III.

CHAP. T.

Containing Reflections on Drunkenness

Differently starts at Salithiery

225

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. III

A fournal of Occurrences between Salisbury and Squire Western's Seat in Somersetshire p. 233

CHAP. III.

What passed after the Leaving of the City of Wells, with Reflections on the foregoing Chapter p. 250

CHAP. IV.

A few remarkable Characters, and useful Hints to the Beau-monde p. 255

CHAP. V.

The prudent Conduct of Mr. Jones, in the Management of his Estate p. 264.

CHAP. VI.

Mr. Allworthy's Advice to his Nephew Jones, with Directions for the Management of his Family, Conduct in Life; and Proposals of Marriage between several of his Dependents p. 268 CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VII.

Containing several secret and curious Anecdotes concerning Love, Courtship, Match-making, and married Fellows of Colleges, who have sworn to live single p. 284

CHAP. VIII.

Containing something worth every Body's Knowledge p. 297

CHAP. IX.

Of Envy, and its direful Effects, represented in the Directions of Lady Bellaston, to disturb Mr. Jones's Family 304

CHAP. X.

Madam Jones's Jealous, and the Plot, which occasioned it, discovered p. 313

CHAP. XI.

Shewing how far Scandal is serviceable to Barbers, Apothecaries, and Physicians; which may serve to conclude this Part of the History 320

THE

15

e

7

4

0

egalented box at HE

HISTORY

www.psi lood and haw a make the formation of the contract of t

TOM JONES

THE

FOUNDLING,

IN HIS

MARRIED STATE.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

Containing some Reflections on Marriage.

the Parts which convey the best Instruction in the former Books of this History, are those Struggles of the charm-

charming and constant Sophia with her Father and Aunt; wherein the fo long, and under so many Difficulties and Sufferings, obstinately rejected their advantageous Propofals of a Marriage, first with Mr. Blifil, and afterwards with my Lord Fellamar, though neither of them were disagreeable in their Perfons; and, according to the common Way of computing, were possessed of Estates much superior to her Fortune; and, in her Affections, preferred one, in all Appearance, much their inferior in Wealth. Yet, notwithstanding, she could not force her Inclinations to submit to the Dictates of her Family; she was firmly resolved to preferve her Duty untainted, and never to marry without her Father's Consent. But as she had a Right so to do, the young Lady only defired they would not force her to marry against her own Liking.

Thus she expressed herself to her Aunt at several Times; and to Mr. Allworthy, at his first Visit, who then highly approved of her Resolution, not so to be captivated with Riches and Honours, and the Prospect of living great, as to consider them the sole Objects of matrimonial Happiness; And, therefore, while Mr. Western was deeply engaged in his Cups with the Father

of

of young Mr. Nightingale, towards the Evening of the happy Day in which Jones and Sophia had been married, Mn Allworthy retired with the rest of the Company; and, as it consisted of three young Couple, married to their own Satisfaction, he congratulated them all; and, according to his usual Custom; treated them over a Dish of Tea, with a Discourse upon Marriage, which he delivered with the Tenderness of a Father, as he really appeared to be in the present happy Union; but he particularly addressed himself to the good Understanding of Sophia.

actual library and a free was library actor well a process My dear Child, faid he, what a happy 5 Change is here before me! How was I deceived by the Hypocrify of Blifil! Oh how you must have been undone, had not · your good Genius inspired your tender ' Years with Courage and Discretion, to bear up under, and to frustrate all the Attempts made against your Liberty, by the deceived Friends of that Wretch! 4 rejoice from my Heart; I rejoice in your · Escape of him. He with my Fortune, to be fure, was no contemptible Match: . The Man is well enough to look at : But -he was a mercenary Creature; and as he scrupled not the perpetrating the worst 6 of

charming and constant Sophia with her Father and Aunt; wherein the fo long, and under fo many Difficulties and Sufferings. obstinately rejected their advantageous Propofals of a Marriage, first with Mr. Blifil. and afterwards with my Lord Fellamar, though neither of them were disagreeable in their Perfons; and, according to the common Way of computing, were possessed of Estates much superior to her Fortune; and, in her Affections, preferred one, in all Appearance, much their inferior in Wealth. Yet, notwithstanding, she could not force her Inclinations to submit to the Dictates of her Family; fhe was firmly refolved to preferve her Duty untainted, and never to marry without her Father's Consent. But as she had a Right so to do, the young Lady only defired they would not force her to marry against her own Liking.

Thus she expressed herself to her Aunt at several Times; and to Mr. Allworthy, at his first Visit, who then highly approved of her Resolution, not so to be captivated with Riches and Honours, and the Prospect of living great, as to consider them the sole Objects of matrimonial Happiness; And, therefore, while Mr. Western was deeply engaged in his Cups with the Father

oflyoung Mr. Nightingale, towards the Evening of the happy Day in which Jones and Sophia had been married, Mn Allworthy retired with the rest of the Company; and, as it consisted of three young Couple, married to their own Satisfaction, he congratulated them all; and, according to his usual Custom, treated them over a Dish of Tea, with a Discourse upon Marriage, which he delivered with the Tenderness of a Father, as he really appeared to be in the present happy Union; but he particularly addressed himself to the good Understanding of Sophia.

e

0

d

e

r

over mequasintian relolwed to the My dear Child, faid he, what a happy Change is here before me! How was I deceived by the Hypocrify of Blifil! Oh how you must have been undone, had not · your good Genius inspired your tender ' Years with Courage and Discretion, to bear up under, and to frustrate all the 6 Attempts made against your Liberty, by the deceived Friends of that Wretch! 1 rejoice from my Heart; I rejoice in your ' Escape of him. He with my Fortune, to be fure, was no contemptible Match: ' The Man is well enough to look at: But • —he was a mercenary Creature; and as he scrupled not the perpetrating the work

B 2

The History of Tom Jones Book L · of Villamies, the fecreting from me the last Words of his own Mother, in order to · find an Opportunity to remove from my Prefence; nay, veven to Suborn Perjury, and to contrive and procure the ignomiinious Death of his elder Brother, that he " might inherit my whole Estate; he would always have facrificed the Peace and Quier, and the very Health and Being of his Wife, to the Gratification of his own Inclinations, I thank kind Providence which has indulged you fo far, as to put you out of the Reach of fuch a Tyrant; for I am fure, at the best, that if you could have been perfuaded or forced, into a Marriage with Blifil, as it was your Father's Intention; and he could have had the Government of his own Temper, fo as to behave towards you with Respect; vour Life must have been either entirely unhappy, or vexatious, or infipid. And though at Mr. Western's earnest Sollicita-' tion I came to Town to settle the marris age Articles between you and Blifil, who then triumphed in deceiving me; I, still finding you resolute against the Match, could not help reflecting upon my own Conduct, in yielding too far to Mr. Western's mistaken Notion of a Child's Duty in the * grand Article of Marriage. I even went · fo

mbir Married State.

A

0

y

1,

2

C

d

r,

5

-

h

u

r

d

a

.-

d

d

-

0

11

-

e

The History of Tom Jones Book P. ed than the House and Improvements in the Purchase of an Estate; in all such · Contracts, she may more properly be said to go with her Fortune, than to fay her · Fortune goes with her. Believe me, my · Child! it would have given me real Concern, to have feen you in such a wretched Condition, through my Means. And ' you, my Friends, who have all taken the ' wise Step to keep clear of this fatal Bar to matrimonial Happiness, look but " round you; and it must be confessed, that these make up the Crowd amongst the Rich, and fill up the Lumber of human Race. And now you are happy in each other's Love, which is regulated by Reafon and Virtue, never mix with those · whose Life is despicable, independent, ' and useless; and who have no Sense of " the Laws of Kindness, good Nature, and " mutual Offices, but eagerly feek and purfue every Art and Opportunity to difgrace that State with Contention and Strife, which was created to nourish Love and Unity amongst Men. Ladies! I cannot conclude, without adding a Word of Com-' mendation of those who take a Husband, " in whom, what they like is not transfer-' able to another: For, if they chuse otherwife, there is no Hopes their Husband will

will ever have what they esteemed in his ' Rival: But intrinsic Qualities in one Man, may very probably purchase every Thing that is adventitious in another: Or, to fpeak more intelligibly; a Man possessed of personal Perfections will sooner arrive at the Gifts of Fortune, than one of a great Estate only, can attain to personal · Perfections.' Here Sophia prefumed to break Silence; and, with her usual Modesty and Grace, replied, - 'I perceive, Sir, you are complimenting me upon my Choice of Mr. Jones, in Preference to . Blifil. And, I must confess, that nothing was more shocking to me, than when ' my dear Father would have hurried me ' into the matrimonial Noose, with a Supposition that Love would naturally ' have followed the Ceremony used by the ' Parson: For, I was confirmed in this ' Principle; That, as I could not discern a-'ny of those good Qualities or personal Per-' fections in Blifil which were eminent in . Mr. Jones, Marriage could never render ' him to accomplished and agreeable to me. And though you had enriched Blifil with 'your whole Estate, and turned Mr. Jones out of your House and Favour; I doubted not to find more Happiness by mar-' rying poor Mr. Jones, than by yielding B 4

' up my Liberty to the rich Blifil.' 'I ap-' plaud your Reasoning; ' says Mr. Allworthy, And I would recommend your

· Example to all young Ladies, who defire to make a fure Purchase of a happy

' Marriage. Let them employ Fortune

upon Certainties; but never facrifice Certainties to Fortune.

These Words were scarce finished, when Squire Western, already pretty forward in his Cups, insisted upon Mr. Allworthy's, and the others Company. To which they were in good Manners obliged to acquiesce, till Wine and Smoak deprived him of Senfation, and lulled him afleep.

CHAP. II.

Containing the Characters of the principal Persons already mentioned; with some Remarks on Tafte.

R. Allworthy was possessed of one of the largest Estates in Somersetshire. He was also enriched with good natural Parts, improved by a liberal Education. And he was a fincere Friend, a liberal Benefactor to the Poor, and truly Religious without Hypocrify.

Mr.

a a

I

t

up my Liberty to the nea Rhill.

)-

11-

ır

e-

y

e

-

n

n

,

Mr. Thomas Jones, the Son of Bridget, the only and beloved Sifter of Mr. Allworthy, by one Mr. Summer, enjoyed many of his Uncle's good Qualities. For though he cannot be placed among the Literati, he did not want the Gifts of Nature. He was a fine Man in Person, and of a courteous, affable, humane Disposition. But so amorous, that his early Lewdness laid him open to the Schemes of his Enemies, involved him in many and great Calamities, and hitherto fullied all his other amiable Qualities in the Opinion of the Virtuous.

Mr. Blifil, the Son of the faid Bridget Allworthy, by her Husband Capt. Blifil, you have read, was covetous, proud, hypocritical, and malicious towards Mr. Jones.

Mr. Twackum was Chaplain and Tutor in this Family, of a cruel, proud, over-bearing Spirit, deceitful, and an Enemy to Tom Jones.

Mr. Western was an ignorant, drunken, Country Squire, peremptory in his Commands, positive in his Affertions, and greedy of Money. Miss

B 5

To The History of Tom Jones Book 1.

Miss Sophia Western, his only Daughter, was celebrated for her Prudence, Virtue, and her Beauty; constant in her Affections to her Lover; and strictly dutiful to her Father.

Mrs. Western, the Squire's Sister, set up for a great deal of Wit and Oeconomy. She was also very Talkative, Vain, Conceited, Ambitious, and Revengeful.

Mr. Supple, the Chaplain was a Batchelor, a very easy Man, good-natured to Excess, and ready to oblige every Body.

Mrs. Honour, an artful, intriguing Chambermaid; first to Miss Sophia, afterwards to Lady Bellaston, was proud and covetous.

Lady Bellaston was a Coquette, vicious, jealous, and revengeful, Tom Jones's secret Enemy.

Mrs. Miller and her Children, Mrs. Waters, Mr. Partridge, and Molly Seagrim, were Friends and Dependants on Mr. Jones.

Mr Dowling, an Attorney, and Steward

1.

ie,

ns er

3)

1

JP

y. T-

e-

X-

1ts

S

s, 35

d

0

to Mr. Allworthy, but entirely influenced by Blifil, was treacherous and ungrateful

her Prudence. Virtue Lord Fellamar was possessed of a large Fortune, but extremely weak in his Intellects, easy to be imposed upon by the defigning Part of his Acquaintance.

These are the principal Persons already mentioned in this History; and of whom we shall have frequent Occasion to treat in the following Sheets. And as it is in the Power of Imagination, once stocked with particular Ideas to enlarge, compound, and vary them at her own Pleasure; so it is sufficient to request your Attention to what I have more to add to the Characters of these Persons, provided I in general preferve a Resemblance, or at least, some remote Analogy to their Actions already represented. And I puff myself up with an Expectation of your Approbation in this Undertaking; because, a Reader finds a Scene drawn in stronger Colours, and painted more to the Life in his Imagination, by the Help of Words, than by an actual Survey of the Scene which they describe. For in the actual Survey of an Object, we have only fo much of it painted on the Imagination, as comes in at the Eye; whereas in B 6 its its Description, the Poet gives us as free a View of it as he pleases, and discovers to us several Parts, that either we did not attend to, or that lay out of sight, at our first View.

fi

n

fi

t

t

n

fore a Man, who is deficient in either of Why then have not all Readers the fame Relish of the same Descriptions? Does it not often happen, that one Reader shall be transported or weep at a Passage, which another runs over with Coldness and Indifference? Or shall find the Representation extremely natural, where another can perceive nothing of Likeness and Conformity?-This different Taste must proceed either from the Perfection of Imagination in one more than in another, or from the different Ideas that several Readers affix to the same Words; and not always from the Imperfection of the Author. For, to have a true Relifh, and to form a right Judgment of a Description, a Man should be born with a good Imagination, and ought fo to weigh the Force and Energy, that lie in the feveral Words of a Language; as to be able to diftinguish which are most fignificant and expressive of their proper Ideas, and what additional Strength and Beauty, they are capable of receiving from Conjunction with others. The Fancy must be warm to retain the

Chos. in bis MARR DED STATE, 12 the Print of those Images, it has received from outward Objects; and the Judgment must be discerning to know what Expresfions are most proper to clothe and adorn them to the best Advantage. And therefore a Man, who is deficient in either of these Particulars, though he may receive the general Notion of a Description, can never fee all its native Beauties distinctly: He may be compared to a weak-fighted Perfon, who has a confused Prospect of a fine Landskip, that lies before him, but is not able to enter into the Beauties of its feveral Parts, nor discern the Variety of its Colours in their full Glory and Perfection.

a

is

d

ft

e

it

e

e

r e t

e

CHAP. III.

What happened on the second Day after Mr. Jones's Marriage with Sophia.

ROM the Occurrences since Squire Western and his Sister Mrs. Western arrived in Town, it appears, that they both were eager to impose a Husband upon Miss Sophia; but were divided in their Interests in Regard to the Man, to whom that charming Virgin was to be sacrificed with their Consent.—So long as Mr. Blissle excelled in Estate, this Female Manager agreed

14 The History of Tom Jones Book I.

greed in Sentiments with her Brother, that his Daughter ought to be compelled into a Marriage with him: Again, the more advantageous Proposal of Lord Fellamar, and the ambitious Prospect of an Alliance with a Title so dazzled her Understanding, and captivated her Heart by the Representations of her Lady, Cousin Bellaston, in his Favour, that she no sooner was informed thereof, than she entered heartly into such Measures, as were conceived might set Blisslasse, and persuade her Niece to accept of the Lord's honourable Terms; though she knew, nothing could be more against the Inclination of the Squire, Sophy's Father.

h

How far Mrs. Western pushed this Match with my Lord, both in Regard to her Brother, her Niece, and Tom Jones, you have been already informed. She now rails against Bliss; represents him to be a hideous Kind of Fellow; hearkens to every Scheme, Lady Bellaston could invent, to ruin Jones in the Affections of Sophia; pleads with her Niece upon the Motives of aggrandizing their Family, of ennobling herself, and of enjoying all that the World calls great and happy. Then, finding no Success by these ambitious Representations, she turns her Sollicitations into Fury, and threatens to give

Chiga in his MAIRRIED STATES 15

give her up again to the Male-treatment of her Father, who was still as strenuous in the Behalf of Mr. Blifil; and, when Madam Western brought Sophia Home, on this Account, he expressed himself with so much Resolution, against marrying his Daughter to a Lord, that she, big with Passion, left him with Protestations never more to set her Foot within his Doors.

From the Time of this Billingate Altercation, Mrs. Western had so far kept her Word, as not to visit her Brother. But, not giving up all Hopes to accomplish what her Ambition only could make her expect, and quite ignorant of the grand Revolution, which Fortune was bringing about in Favour of Jones, she, backed by Lady Bellaston, informs him of Sopley's Constancy to Jones, and adviseth him to take all the Care he could of his Daughter, left he should be released from his Confinement, and run away with her; and found Means even to raise Sophy's Resentment against her Beloved, by flyly communicating to her that Letter, which, with young Mr. Nightingale's Advice and Direction, Mr. Jones had written to Lady Bellaston, with a Proposal of Marriage; though it was cal-

SHUEL

76 The History of Tom Jones Book 1. culated only to break off all criminal Conversation with her Ladyship.

But the News of Mr. Jones's Release from the Gate-bouse; his Reception into Mr. Allworthy's Favour; his near Alliance to that Gentleman by Birth; the Difgrace of Blifil; and above all, the Certainty of his having confummated the Marriage, she always dreaded, with her Niece, and that, contrary to all Expectation, with her Brother's Consent and Approbation, was no fooner communicated by public Report, than, like a Courtier, who always haftens to tender his Service to a new Minister, when, at the fame Time, nothing is more at his Heart, than to pull him down from the Favour and Esteem of his Prince; she smothers her Resentment for the present; declares her Acquiescence and Approbation of her Niece's Marriage; and concerts with Lady Bellaston, to pay the Bride an hypocritical Visit of Felicitation on that sudden and strange Event.

Mrs. Western had so artfully disguised her Intentions, and armed herfelf with every little Suggestion to create a good Opinion of her Sincerity, that she found but little Difficulty, in gaining some Credit to the Profesfions

Ch

fior tov

no Ch

juf

the

• 1

·

< t

6

.

Ch. 3. in bis MARRIED STATE: 17 fions the made of Friendship and Affection towards the new married Couple. She was no fooner conducted by Mr. Jones to a Chair, with all the Complaifance he was justly celebrated for; but she felicitated them both on the happy Occasion. heartily congratulate you, in particular, ' fays she, Nephew Jones, upon this happy ' Event; and hope you will attribute all ' the Opposition I made to your Marriage with my Niece, to the fole View of doing the best I could, according to the ' Suggestions of human Prudence, for my Relations. This was the Cause of my Espousing the Interest of Mr. Blifil, in the first Proposal by my Brother to Mr. Allworthy: And as I gave him up, when a more advantageous Offer came from my Lord Fellamar, it should, it ought to be admitted in Evidence, that my Objection did not lie against your Person, no more than against Mr. Blifil's; but, ' you know, Sir, the Interest of a Family must be consulted: I believe there are very few, except such a real Lover as my ' Niece, could refift the Temptations of a ' fine Gentleman, with the Charms of a very ' large Estate, a Title, and a Coach with ' a Coronet. I must confess that the Situation I saw you in at one Time, preju-

to

ce

ce

of

ne

t,

)-

10

t,

15

r,

e

n

e

;

n

h

n

r

18 The History of Tom Jones Book I. · diced you much in my Opinion; though as Things have changed about I fincerely applaud my Niece's Choice; and with ' you all Happiness together .- I am sure, it delivers me, as well as my Brother, from much Trouble; and can avouch for Sophy, that it has put her in Possession of all that the ever wished to enjoy. You must think that I have some Notion of · Things.— I could fee as far into a Millfrom as any Body else.—And I was per-· fuaded her Constancy to her Love would never forfake her. You know, my Dear, I have tried you all Ways; but I · doubt not of your now putting the best · Construction upon it .- I am no Hypocrite; I cannot carry a double Face.'-Mrs. Western would have continued, but the Squire, her Brother, being apprized of her Visit, pushed into the Parlour, and opening the Chace with a loud Hallow! Well, fays he, Zifter, there's that Juones, who thu and some Volks call'd Rascal: he's now my Zun.-Zounds! What confunded Lies I've bin toold of um. I hoop thu arn't coome to breake the Peace ' with fuch other Stwories.' Mrs. Western's Temper was almost disconcerted with her Brother's Bluntness: But as her Game was to difguife her real Intentions, nothing per**ipired**

Ch. fpir leaft fhe ful

for way

• n

tl a

·I

6 G

rel

6

6

6.

nelv vish for of ou of illermy it I eft but of ies. al: onace n's

er-

ed

Ch. 3. in bis MARRIED STATE. 19 fpired in her Reply, that discovered the least Emotion or Guilt. On the contrary, the masked her Countenance with an artful Smile; and with an Air of Submission, for which the had never been remarkable, waved the Truth of her Brother's Suspicion with A don't use me so ill. You must confess that I know as many good Things as any Body else.—And all my Care and Study has been to manage for the Good of the Family.—And as Things are now circumstanced, I hope, by my future Address, to cancel all the little · Difgusts, which I have undefignedly and unwillingly been the Occasion of.' ' Ay, · Ay, faid the Squire, is it zo. I have hit o't.' Let me go.

Mr. Western being withdrawn, Mr. Jones' replied to his Aunt: 'Madam, I am sen's sibly affected with your kind Congratu's lation on this truly happy Occasion, which has not only delivered me out of the greatest Missortunes; but put me in Possession of all I desire in the World; the Enjoyment of my charming Sophia. I am also fully satisfied as to the Principles, which were not of Hatred to the Person, as you distinguish, but of Regard to your Family, that carried you to those

20 The History of Tom Jones Book I. those Extremities, we have experienced. Riches and Honours are great Temptations to a Heart, that is not fortified with e real Love; and I at present have no Reafon, and I hope never shall, to question the Sincerity of your voluntary Profese fions of Regard for me, and my dear · Sophia. But, as I find by Experience, that Mankind take an ill-natured Pleafure in croffing our Inclinations, and difappointing us in what our Hearts are most fet upon; I cannot expect to live hereafter, no more than I have deserved such 'Treatment heretofore, without the Envy of many; especially of those, who led to an Expectancy of what the never countenanced, aspired to any Pretensions on vour Niece; and therefore I have a Right to expect that all my Friends, and in particular they, who have given me the most Uneasiness in my Pursuit of what I onow enjoy, will concur to maintain the · Peace of Mind, which is fo effential to the Happiness of a married State.

Whether Mr. Fones suspected the Sincerity of his Aunt's Reconciliation, I shall not enquire at present: It is certain, he always behaved to her henceforward, with great Caution; and for the present contented

Ch.

her by

y y

a a v

> r r

* , t

4

W

T

ed. taith ea-

I.

ion ef-

ear ice.

eadif-

floi

eafach

TVYto:

un-

on ght

*in

the.

at I

the to

Sinhall

alwith con-

nted

tented himself with shewing his Disgust at her, Mrs. Western's, past officious Behaviour, by the following Observations.

from and shope never thall, to Pardon me, Madam, continued Mr. fones, for the Liberty of observing that

you demeaned yourself very much in the

Affair of my Lord Fellamar, wherein you

played the direct Part of a Match-maker;

and what gives me more Concern is, the very Reason which you advance for so

extraordinary a Degrading of the Family

of Western's, subjects you to that Character in the worst Sense. It shocked

' me to hear you was determined to facri-

· fice the Peace and Quiet of your Niece's ' Mind, to the Benefit of a Family, as you

term it.

Can Wealth give Happiness? Look round, and see

What gay Distress! what splendid Misery! Wealth is a Cheat, believe not what it says, Like any Lord it promises—and pays: Then wed not Acres, but a noble Mind.

Can Gold calm Passion, or make Reason Spine?

Can we dig Peace, or Wisdom, from the Mine? Wildom

Wisdom to Gold prefer; for, 'tis much less To make our Fertune, than our Happiness. Nothing is meaner than a Wretch of State; The Happy only are the truly Great.

Ch

2

5 C

- 1

· b

· V

• k

6 B

f t

f t

FI

·I

s t

F e

6 b

· n

6 C

. (

s a

in

6 (

4 b

· ti

· 7

·I

4 n

n F

6 e

though our, bad denibends, as God You must have strange Notions of fulfice; or certainly you must confess to raise Profit by Abuses, is as irreparable, as taking away Life is worse than to rob, and even more grievous than Murther; because such a Match consum-· mated becomes an everlasting Misery to the Party deceived. To rob a Lady, at Play, of half, nay I had almost faid, of sall her Fortune, is not so ill as giving the whole and herfelf to an unworthy 4 Man. I cannot harbour fo gross an Im-' putation against one so nearly allied; but it is the common Practice of fuch, as have perfuaded young Women to yield up their Liberty to those they dislike, to ' try if they cannot also persuade them to ' foften their Afflictions at Home, by en-' joying an agreeable Gallant Abroad. Nor can I help the Remembrance of those · violent Methods made Use of by my Father Western, to biass the Affections of 'my dear Sopby: I thankfully acknow-· ledge your Prudence and Tenderness in 6 this Particular, that preserved her in a

k 1

fs

te;

s of nfess

epa-

than

than

lum-

y to

1. at

ving orthy

Im-

but

in a

great

300 771

5.

them.

great Measure from the Hardships, which otherwise his rough Temper might have laid upon her. Where young Ladies blindly cast themselves away upon Men, who turn out bad Husbands, as, God knows, is too often the Case; they are feldom found to repine at their bad Fortune; and bear the Difappointment of the Happiness they expected, with greater Patience. But, there is no Calamity in Life that falls heavier upon human Nature, than a Disappointment in Love; fespecially when it happens, as in our Case, between two Persons whose Hearts are l. of mutually engaged. Therefore I must ever blame the Cruelty of Parents and · Guardians, who will not allow the Child a Negative in this grand Article of Life. i, as They who force a Child of a liberal and yield ingenuous Spirit into the Arms of a e, to Clown or a Blockhead, may be faid to be, in a Degree, the Cause of an unnam to entural Conjunction of a rational Creature Nor with a Brute. I do not know what the those Traders in Matrimony think of it; but, Fa-I am of Opinion, that Wedlock is but a more folemn Proftitution, where there is s of not a Union of Minds. This Rigour of nowis in Parents, and mistaken Obedience exact-

ed from their Children, has brought on

24 The History of Tom Jones Book I.

(

(

t

n

n

0

e

them that Distress, which is the Subject

of the finest Tragedies, and daily fills

the World with Melancholy, Discontent,

Phrenfy, Sickness, Despair, and Death

'itfelf.'

Mrs. Western, who easily discovered the Meaning of Mr. Jones's Observations, was just a going to reply in defence of the Parents Authority over their Children; when my Lady Bellaston's Footman thundered at the Door; fhe therefore begged leave to be excused from touching upon all the Particulars, and had only Time enough to fay, · That unhappy Marriages did not so often proceed from the Over-bearing or Perfuafion of Parents, as from the Misconduct of Childrens yielding too much to Incli-' nation. For, when they let their Imaginations take this unbridled Swing, it is on not he that acts best, that is most lovely; but he that is most lovely, acts best in their Eyes and Affections. And when their humble Servants make their Ad-' dresses, Women do not keep themselves enough difengaged to be Judges of their Merit; fo that they feldom give their Judgment of their Lovers, till they have I loft their Judgment for them.

to at one to many, as at daily

Then Mr. Johns, Swing her Ladythip Time

Lady Bellaston's Visit to the new-married Couple.

T ADY Bellaston, by this Time entered with all the feeming Good-nature and Complaifance imaginable; and was received without the least Appearance of Discontent or Discovery, on the Part of the newmarried Couple. After the usual Compliments passed on these Occasions, a deep Silence enfued, till Mr. Jones, with an Air of Pleasantry, applied to the two unmarried Ladies, with a 'Why so pensive Ladies? I dare fay Matrimony is not fo ' dreadful a Thing as to fright you.' 'You ' judge right, replied Lady Bellaston; I ' speak however for myself only.—Fie Mr. ' Jones, you are enough to discourage your ' Bride with fuch an Infinuation, that I, who ' have had my Share in the matrimonial ' State, should be suspected to be frightened at the Sight of so happy a Couple, as you are. But indeed I was thinking, Mr. Jones, ' that it is a Misfortune, that the Marriage State, which in its own Nature is adapted ' to give us the completest Happiness this 'Life is capable of, should be so uncom-' fortable

AP.

k I.

oject

fills tent.

leath

l the

was

Pa-

when

ed at

to be

Parti-

fay,

often

rfua-

nduct

Incli-

nagi-

it is

vely;

est in

when

Ad-

felves

their

their

have

fortable a one to fo many, as it daily proves. Oh! had I but the Man I love.—' Then Mr. Jones, giving her Ladyship Time to fight and recollect her Spirits a little, which seemed to be flattened all on a sudden, replied, 'I grant the Misfortune is intolerable, but permit me to add, that I sapprehend the Mischief generally proceeds from an Expectation of Happinels from 1 Things not capable of giving it Believe me, nothing but the good Qualities of the Person beloved can be a Foundation for a Love of Judgment and Discretion; and whoever expects Happiness in Pros portion to the Honours and large Estates of their Husbands, or from any Thing * but Virtue, Wisdom, Good-humour, and a Similitude of Manners, will find them-' felves widely mistaken. Therefore did · Mankind feek after these Things, and not " make Riches their chief, if not their on-1 ly Aim: Could we fatisfy ourfelves, when the Marriage State is refolved upon, to " feek out only for a constant, agreeable · Companion, who is willing to divide the * Cares, and double the Joys of her Hufband; who will manage that Share of his Estate or Income intrusted to her Conduct with Prudence and Frugality; goe vern his House with Occonomy and Dis-

cretion,

kI. Secretion, and be an Ornament to him and aily her Family, who, bin fine, places her of chief Happiness in the Practice of Virtue, ime strand makes her Duty her continual Pleattle, Fure Would Mendnot take up with a udlarge Sum of Money, as the End of all intheir Defires; and regardless of what at I Kind of Wives they take, think Riches eeds mo will procure them all Kind of Pleasures, rom forthey enable them to keep Mistresses. ieve ' Horses, and Hounds; to drink, feast, s of ' and game; to pay their Debts contractition ed by former Extravagancies, or some ion; fuch vile and unworthy End; and in-Produlge themselves in Pleasures, which tates hing ' are a Shame and a Scandal to human Nature; the Prospect of a Marriage State, I and dare fay, would never convey to us any hem-' Objects of Horror.—I have feen my Foldid ' ly.— I will never abuse my Wife and her d not ' Substance, in following the criminal Der onlights of my unmarried State. And then, when ' as for Women, they would generally find n, to more Satisfaction, could they be ruled to eable ' place the Happiness of their Marriage, in le the ' the having a wife and virtuous Friend; Hufone who will be faithful and just to all, of his ' and constant and loving to them; who Con-' with Care and Diligence will look after ; go-' and improve the Estate; and without d Difetion.

28 The History of TOM JONES Book I.

Grudging will allow whatever is prudent and convenient. I cannot help protesting against those, who place all their Happiness in outshining others in Pomp and Show; and when they have once got a Husband, think of nothing but how they shall squander away their Substance, in striving to outstrip their Acquaintance in Equipage, Drefs, and magnificent Furniture. Thus, 4 I have observed, both Sexes deceive them-4 felves, and bring Reflexions and Difgrace upon, what I hope to find, the most hap-' py and most honourable State of Life, by * their own Imprudences and Miscarriages; whereas, would they but correct their depraved Tafte, moderate their Ambition, · and place their Happiness upon proper Objects; Felicity, in a Marriage State,

would not be found such a Wonder, as it now seems to be, especially amongst Peo-

· ple of Diftinction and Fortune.'

These solemn Truths were delivered with so much Emphasis, that they at once bespoke the real Sentiments of his Heart; gave Lady Bellaston a plain Intimation of his Dislike to her Way of Living; openly resolved to forsake the Follies of his Youth; and most wisely reproved Mrs. Western for her too great Attachment to Riches, more than

Ch. 4. in bis MARRIED STATE. 29 than Merit, in all her Instructions to her Niece Sophia.

It was well understood by them both; but as Mr. Jones had spoken nothing but stubborn Truths, and it would have been at once discovering their Enmity to him, and their wicked Scheme to undermine his future Happiness; they concealed their Refentment, and took their Leave with applications of the Generosity of his Sentiments, and strong Professions of Friendship.

Lady Bellaston complimented Mrs. Weftern with a Part of her Chariot; but turning short, as if she had somewhat to fay in Private, My dear Sophia, fays the Lady, ' if I offended you by proposing the Match with Lord Fellamar, it was done with a real good Intention. I was fo enraged at him for the Rudeness he offered to your · Person, that I would never see him since, onor ever will give him my Company. could perceive you was difgusted with me for it. But to convince you of my Friendfhip, and Abhorrence of such an Action: when the Imprudence of your Aunt, and the Passion of your Father, put it out of my Power to serve you in any other Way; I risqued their Favour, and their Esteem, " and

n

30 The History of Tom Jones Book I.

' and laid myself open to my Cousin's op-· probrious Language, by openly espousing ' your Cause, and placing your Maid Hoo nour, that good and faithful Servant, the ' Companion in your Sufferings, next my own Person. I love her, because she has ' proved her Fidelity to you and Mr. Jones. And I am fatisfied no Time nor Change of Circumstances will ever be able to efface the Love the is always profesting for 'you both. And though I prize her above ' all my Attendants; yet as a further Evidence of my Regard to you, I am willing to restore her to you again. And, as I · likewife know it is her Inclination to be about your Person, I will sincerely resign her up, upon the least Intimation of its being also agreeable to yourself. Mrs. Sophia Jomes, for so we are to call her now, not being acquainted with the true Reafons of Mrs. Honour's being taken into that Lady's Service, believed this whole Narrative; and having a great Opinion of her Maid's Fidelity to her Person, readily sell into the Snare of this artful Lady, and accepted of her kind Proposal. By which Means, Honour was re-instated in her Place

of Waiting-maid to her former Miftress.

and laid myfelf open to my Coufin's open

Mr. Jones carries bis Lady to a Play.

The Ese Ladies were just gone, when the Esquire bounces open the Parlour Door, with a 'Zounds, Son Jouanes, wilt 'not carry Sopby to a Play, before goes out of Town? Here's vive Guineas. Go, 'go this Moment. Let the Girl zee vat Tricks these Town-volks play.' Mr. Jones and his Spouse, who wanted no Diversions to pass away the Time, which rather seemed too short for their own private Entertainment in the mutual Transports occasioned by their late happy Union, would not, however, shew any Backwardness to their Papa; but prepared immediately for the Play-house.

The Play this Evening at the —— was, She would if she could—which, as Madam Sophy had never been in a Theatre before, happened very unlucky, as it gave her a Disgust to all Entertainments of the like Sort ever after; and created in her a bad Opinion of the Morals of those she found to take any Pleasure in theatrical Diversions; to whose forward Air and Fashion, C4 from

e

32 The History of Tom Jones Book I.

m

from her chaste Education, and some Acts of this Play, the contracted an utter Averfion. While the Play lasted, Mrs. Jones loft all Patience; and, as foon as the found herfelf back at her Lodgings, where her Father and Mr. Allworthy waited their Return, the furprized them very much at her open and peremptory Declaration, that the never would fpend her Time fo badly any more, at a Place where Women could not be prefent, without doing Violence to their Chastity and Modesty: And Men were encouraged to feek after, and confummate forbidden Embraces, -She was already become fo much the Wife, that she made herself and her Husband Parties in every Action, that tended to dishonour the married State, though at ever so great a Diftance from their own Circumstances. In fine, she, on this Occasion, gave violent Suspicions, that her extraordinary Love would at last degenerate into Jealousy, the worst of all Torments. Whether Mr. Allworthy perceived the Tendency of this violent Emotion, I will not presume to say; but, though he was not an Advocate for theatrical Entertainments promiscuously, he, taking the Opportunity of Mr. Western's Napping, replied with an Air of Admiration at fuch an abrupt Speech from a newmarried

Ch. 5. in bis MARRIED STATE. 33 married Lady: 'Niece, fays he, why fo disgusted with the Play-house? - You was carried there to be merry. I wonder, Sir, saith she, where the Mirth can be to hear a Heap of luscious, immodest, bawdy Expressions and Actions. Fie upon them! I wish I was at Home again in Somerfetsbire, with my Jones in my Arms. 'They will certainly corrupt him, if he frequents those Houses of Debauchery; where the very young Girls pretend Modefty, by mading their bold Faces with their Fans, and twitter and laugh at what is a Shame to be feen or heard. I pro-' test against all such Diversions.—Then Mr. Allworthy interrupting her; I confess, ' faid he, the Diversions at the Play houses are much degenerated from their origial Defign. But then let us not lay the Fault upon this Sort of Entertainment; onot upon theatrical Performances in general; but upon the vicious and corrupt · Taste of the Age, which will not be ' pleased without such Indecencies. When · I was young, I delighted much in frequenting Plays; I found them instructive as well as entertaining. I learned both to ' speak well, and to add a good Grace to ' my Words. And for this same Reason, I believe, the Play-house in those Days was

I.

er-

nes

nd

er

e-

er

he'

y

ld

to

re

te

-

e

y

-

7

34 The History of Tom Jones Book I. the Evening Refort of the polite and difengaged Part of the Town. And if the chafte and witty Stile and Manners of our Plays have given Place to Immodefty and Bombast, we must attribute the luscious Expressions, you justly complain of, to the Shifts of an Author, when he is spent; for, not being able to strike out of himself any more of that, which he has fuperior to those, who make up the Bulk of his Audience, his natural Recourse is to that, which he has in common with them; knowing that a Description which gratifies a fenfual Appetite will please, when the Author has nothing about him to delight. A Circumstance highly blameable-and what, no doubt, banisheth many Ladies from the Enjoyments of the Theatre: Nay, this is fuch a Resource as can by no Means be excused: For as we feldom find any one abandoned to more than one Vice at a Time, there is Room enough to gain Applause from their mixed Audiences, if the Poets would attempt it with that Honesty, which becomes their Characters on the Stage: though, by the modern Practice, it looks as if the readiest Way to gain good Audiences, · must be to offer such Things as are most f relished by the Crowd; or, as you defcribed fcribed it, immodest Action, empty Show,

or impertinent Activity: Which every

Body ought to discourage, if they love

Plays have given Place to InsutriVit

oI.

lif-

the

our Ny

uf-

of.

is

out

has alk

is

ith

ich

ife.

im

ne-

na-

we

ore

m ix-

pt

ies

th,

he

er,

le-

ed

and Bombaft, we must attribute the lust coust happy and somplain of

The Misinterpretation of Mr. Jones's Kind-

superior to those, who make up the Bulk IN the Morning, Mr. Jones acquainted his Bride, that he was going to take Leave of Mr. Blifil, and should return again by Breakfast-time. Mr. Jones, at the Time he carried Allworthy's Message to Mr. Blift, omitted nothing which his Invention could supply, to raise and comfort his drooping Spirits, before he communicated to him the Resolution of his Uncle to quit his Lodgings that very Evening. He fincerely pardoned him, so far as related to himself; promised to retain a brotherly Correspondence with him; offered to furnish him with Money; and affured him, that nothing should be wanting, on his Part, to effectuate a perfect Reconciliation. With the same good and generous Spirit, he now returns to this unhappy Man, not to infult, but to convince him, with the most sensible Tokens of Friendship, that C 6 he otheri

36 The History of Tom Jones Book I

he had entirely banished all Thoughts of Retaliation, and should do all in his Power to make his Life as happy as possible under the Affliction, which must naturally follow from the Loss of such great Expectations, and the never to be obtained Reconciliation with his Uncle: and he so contrived his Discourse, as to demonstrate what he had to say was not so much to please himself, as for Mr. Bliss's Good and Benefit.

99

W/

the Inftrument of two hundred Pounds a He, quite unexpected, took the young Gentleman at unawares; just rifen from an uneasy Bed, on which he had been, a whole Night, bewailing his Misfortune. The Thoughts of what he had loft; the Want and Misery that pursued and threatened him with immediate Destruction; and all the Horrors of Remorfe for his Ingratitude, Perfidy, and intended Fratricide, would not permit his Eye-lids to slumber. And as, upon the bad Principles he himfelf had acted against his Brother, knowing him to be fuch, he could expect no Sincerity in the Professions made by Mr. Jones, notifying his Difgrace; he, therefore, interpreted this unexpected Visit to be the Harbinger of his final Ruin; till he was undeceived with his freet and fmiling Countenance, and the following tender and affectionate

e

hood, and received the Tokens of his Brother's Reconciliation with Protestations of his eternal Gratitude. Grief and Weeping are indeed frequent Companions; but I believe never in their highest Excesses; for it is well known that the Heart, distended with Grief, stops all Passages for Lamentations and Tears: Therefore, as Mr. Jones did not imagine that profound Sorrow must neceffarily be attended with Weeping; but that true Affliction labours to be invisible; and that the Humility of his Words and Actions, which ran through his prefent Behaviour, gave more fure Proofs of the Sense of his late destitute Condition, and Thankfulness for his present Relief; he congratulated himself with the Hopes of having wrought in Mr. Blifil a thorough Remorfe and Repentance for his past Behaviour, and a grateful Sense of the Benefit received from himself, and by his Means; and embracing him in the most tender Manner, under this Perfuafion he took his final Leave. And truly this Virtue gained the Ascendant, so powerfully, for the present, that Mr. Blifil's raptured Soul broke out into the following Verses, recollected from the Spectator. The same of the same and the the stranger once good to the section

Many our may and grantoly and bwken

97

T

10

When all thy Mercies, O my God,
My rising Soul surveys;
Transported with the View, I'm lost
In Wonder, Love, and Praise.

ro-

of

ing

be-

rit

ith

ons did

ne-

out

e:

ind

Be-

he

nd he

of

le-

vi-

re-

n-

nal

he

ot,

m

1

212

O how shall Words with equal Warmth
The Gratitude declare,
That glows within my ravish'd Heart?
But thou can'st read it there.

Thy bounteous Hand, with worldly Bliss,

Has made my Cup run o'er;

And, in a kind and faithful Friend,

Has doubled all my Store.

reas one Affiction labours to be invilible.

Through every Period of my Life,
Thy Goodness I'll pursue;
And after Death, in distant Worlds,
The glorious Theme renew.

When Nature fails, and Day and Night
Divide thy Works no more;
My ever grateful Heart, O Lord!
Thy Mercy shall adore.

During this Transport of Joy, Mr. Dowling entered in a great Hurry and Confusion; and being quite ignorant of what had passed this Morning between the two Brothers. thers, came charged with premeditated Revenge against Jones and all his Friends; for he expected to be also discharged from his Stewardship, as soon as the Family could be settled in the Country. He just caught Blift's last Words,

Ch

61

6

·t

6

67

. 1

6 1

Thy Mercy shall adore. timong sand

you come in Possession, all you malitake And imagining that the young Gentleman, abandoned to Grief, was at his Prayers, and begging Relief from Heaven, cryed out, with a Kind of Fury, What Mer-' cy do you implore, Mr. Blifil? You are ' to expect no Mercy from such a wicked ' Crew; there is no Relief for you, but in ' a Court of Justice, which you may one Day obtain; fo as to put you in full Pof-' fession and Seisin of all the Estates of your ' Uncle Allworthy. Do not give yourself ' a Moment's Concern about Consequences. ' Your Uncle, in the Course of Nature, has not long to live, then I will-: yes, ' that I will. I will prove you his fole Heir, ' and out that Jones, and all the Bastard ' Offspring; and make him refund whatever Waste he' shall commit in the mean 'Time upon that Effate. And till then I will supply all your Wants; I will an-' fwer all your Demands, that you may live

T.

r is

d

it

e d

n

e

r f

3.

d

n

n

· live like a Gentleman. There is the Cafe. . I drew it up, the Moment I heard of your Dismission; and there is the Opinion of the best Council, a Conveyancer, a special Pleader, a Chancery Counsellor, &c, who unanimously affert your sole Right to Mr. ' Allworthy's Estate! I only defire you will ' fign a promiffory Note to repay me, when vou come in Possession, all you shall take ' up upon my Credit, and the Charges I ' must necessarily be at in the Law on your ' Account; and there is my Bill of Credit: it is already accepted, and you may at all 'Times, upon producing it, be supplied with fuch Sums as you require of Mr. · C-l-b-k. But hush, never let my Friendship perspire, for, if possible, I will keep in my Place. I will put up with all Affronts, I will creep and cringe to the Bastard for your Sake; for it will be of great Service to your Cause to have the Management of the Estate in my ' Hands, and to be about the Persons, and to be in the Favour and Confidence of your Antagonists. I shall be able not only to come at their Defence; but it may be, to baffle any Schemes which the Subtilty of the Lawyers may cast in the Way to ob-' Aruct our Proceedings.' Mr. Mari Work of Hot selections (The

Mr. Blift perceived indeed, that Dowling was quite ignorant of the Favours he had just received from Mr. Jones: And though Self-love was very urgent with his Heart to close with the Lawyer's Advice, to believe all he had advanced, and to throw himself wholly into his Power; yet the Principle of Gratitude, which was now glowing within his Heart, ravished by the Behaviour, as well as Generofity, of Mr. Jones, would not permit him to conceal them on this Occasion. What, replied Mr. Blifil, is it possible for me to hearken to any ' Proposal, though ever so advantageous, to injure my Benefactor; the Man from whom I have received, in the most obliging Manner, the Comfort of an eafy Fortune; even from him, whom I had fo basely contrived to ruin; No, Mr. Dow-· ling: I now feel a Pleasure I never was acquainted with before. I will preferve a grateful Heart; I find it accompanied with such an inward Satisfaction, that were it not a Duty, nor any Recompence laid up for it hereafter, I think I ought to indulge myself in its Performance; I beg you will, for the future, never grate my Ears with the ignominious Name you ' give Mr. Jones. He is the Preserver of my Life; he has not only obtained an

Ch. 6

An

H.

iny Le

Go

Wi

ga

T

far l ning ded

of a

the

whi

way of 1

his

hea

hea

for

fro

· An-

kt.

070-

he

Ind

his

ice,

yet

the

Mr.

em Bli-

any

ous,

om

bli-

eafy

d fo

owwas

rve

ied

that

ence

ght

; I

rate

you

r of

an

An-

Annuity of 200 l. from my Uncle for me, but has of his own free Gift enlarged it with 100 l. per Annum, more. Shall I, can'I, harbour any ill Defign against my Friend in Need? I once ran great Lengths to ruin him without Provocation. God forgive them that were my bad Advisers. I am convinced of my Error, I will not enter into any more Schemes against him.

This most unexpected Declaration very much surprized Dowling; nay it was fo far beyond his Comprehension, that, imagining Blifil was grown delirious, he concluded these were only Phrensies, the Effects of a cracked Brain, overloaded with Grief, and arising from a confused Meditation on the late Practices against Mr. Jones's Life, while under Confinement; and therefore waving all Notice of Particulars, he begged of him to compose himself, and not disturb his Brain about Things that were never likey to come to pass; for he himself had heard Allworthy declare, he should never hearken to any Reconciliation; that he would never fee him; and that he had already struck him out of his Will. for Jones, there could be nothing expected from him, but the keenest Revenge, whenever

44 The History of Tom Jones Book I. ever he should find himself in a Capacity to exert it. What, replied Blifil, do you then think I am in a Dream, or mad?
No, see! behold! here is the Substance.
Jones, that best of Brothers, has been here, has forgiven me all that is past; and has presented me with this Annuity of 200 l. from my Uncle, and 100 l. per Annum, his own free Gift. These are the Writings. Nothing could ftartle Dowling more, than these Proofs of Mr. Jones's Regard for his Brother Blifil; he nevertheless was so far from giving up his Cause for loft, that he made Use of this very Act of Friendship, as the most effectual Means to stifle the Sparks of Gratitude it had kindled in Blifil's Heart. For, 'Truly, fays he, Mr. Blifil, I could not have thought they would have acted with fo much Imprudence. I always looked upon Jones to be more crafty, than to betray his own Weakness so much. Certainly, if he had ' nothing to fear from you, he would never ' have pardoned you unasked, nor courted 'your Friendship. He is conscious of his own Baftardy; and therefore he has ene gaged your Uncle not to drive you to · feek those just Remedies, which the Laws of the Land prescribe for the Injured; and, by Way of an Opiate, to alleviate

Ch.

you

bei ma fity tat tha

the

ful

fel

for ing ble

in

th

up

to

ne

le

qu

le

in

N

Pai

est

k I.

ty to

you

had?

ince.

been

and y of

Anthe

Dow-

nes's

the-

e for

Et of s to

ind-

s he,

they

pru-

s to

OWII

had

ever

rted

fhis

en-

aws

red;

viate

vour

your present Afflictions, augments this Annuity to you, out of his own Purfe; that being made easy in your Fortune, you may never be prompted through Necesfity to affert your Right to the whole Eftate of the Allworthy's — This is no better than a Confession of a bad Title. It shews what they are afraid of, when they fubmit to bribe fo high. And be but advised, and I will put you into full Posfession of all at your Uncle's Death. As for that little Bar in the Way, the proving your Mother a Whore; -I am lenfable you do not care it should be proved in a public Court of Judicature: but, as that is all, and it can in no wife reflect upon yourfelf, she being lawfully married to your Father; and as it is absolutely necessary in order to prove Jones not her legitimate Son, and consequently no Ways qualified to inherit the Estate of her Family; I hope you will not boggle at it; leave all to me, I will dress her Fault up in as neat Terms as the Law can invent. Never fell your Birth-right for a Mess of Pottage.

This artful Speech, however falle as to Particulars, being tempered with Self-intereft and Ambition, wrought powerfully on the

the Heart of Blifil; whose Gratitude seemed now yielding to the Suggestions of Dowling, who by this Time had persuaded him that he had been deceived by the Art and Grimace of Jones; as you will read in the Sequel of this History.

CHAP: VIII. nenW

Mrs. Honour instructed and sent to tender ber Service to Madam Sophia.

ADY Bellaston well pleased with the Behaviour of Madam Sophia Jones, at her Offer of restoring Mrs. Honour to her Service, was now fo to manage the Affair as to make Mrs. Western also subservient in her Plot against Mr. Jones, and yet to cover her Defign, and the real Caufe of her employing Mrs. Honour in its Execution; fo that they were no fooner in the Coach, than my Lady with great Pleasure acquainted Mrs. Western of the great Hopes she conceived from Mrs. Jones's Readiness to reinstate her Maid Honour about her Person. Though Mrs. Western could not abide Honour, from the Time she had played her that fly Trick in carrying off her Niece; yet she concluded, that, if she could be trusted, there could not be a more artful Huffy

C

in

ed

W

hi

he

ter

6

.

•

.

.

6/1

.

.

6

6

6

cI. m-07Unim and the

nder

Bet her Serir as it in D- COf her tion; oach,

iaints fhe is to erson. e Hod her liece;

trust-Huffy

in

Ch. 7. in bis MARRIED STATE. in the World; and that, if the could be gained over, the was the most likely Person to work their Defign between Mr. Jones and his Lady. My Lady Bellaston vouched for her Fidelity, and undertook the whole Direction of their Scheme.

When Lady Bellaston had fet Mrs. Western down at her own Lodgings, the impatiently hurried Home to found her Maid: · Honour, fays my Lady, you must remember when I admitted you into my Service, you was turned out of Doors, and left in · a strange Place entirely destitute. - It was · purely my Tenderness for you that engae ged me to be your Friend. It is true the · Difadvantage, in which you met me in Mr. Jones's Room, might have flattered one of less Prudence and Discernment than ' yourself, that I might have taken her into my Family to stop her Prating. But as it is no Crime to be in Love, when it is with a chafte Intention to confummate ' it in the Bond of Wedlock; fo I am not ashamed to own, that I was enamoured

rance to make any Advances of that Nature to one of my Quality, without some

Liberties given on my Side; What Harm

with the Person of Mr. Jones. And as I

apprehend he could not have the Affu-

48 The History of Tom Jones Book I. was there in modefully intimating my Paffion for him? You are fenfible, Girl, that I gave no Way to any Indecencies. ' I must own, it however discomposed me ' much, to find I was over heard. But to convince you that Mr. Jones understood ' my Intentions, he immediately fent me the following Letter, with the Proposals of Marriage. "O Lady Bellaston, what a "Terror have I been in, for Fear your Re-" putation should be exposed by these per-" verse Accidents? There is one only Way " to fecure it; I need not name what that is, " Only permit me to fay, that as your Honour is as dear to me as my own, fo my " fole Ambition is to have the Glory of " laying my Liberty at your Feet; and be-" lieve me when I affure you, I can never " be made completely happy, without you " generously bestow on me a legal Right " of calling you mine for ever." - 'I marry, that is his Hand-writing. I know it very well, faid Honour, I have received many of his Letters to my Lady Sophia. ' Well then, my Girl, continued the Lady; it was ' not through Fear of your making any Difcoveries of my Amour, to my Disadvantage; but in my Tenderness, as I told ' you before, that I have retained you about my Person. And indeed, as I thought

C

6 (

•]

4 1

3

]

• y

1

y

(

h

1

PE

i

n

n S

h

b

C

· you

6 b

Ch. 7. in his MARRIED STATE. 49 I. you had acted the Part of a faithful Seraf-' vant towards my Coufin Sophia, I could irl, onot look upon the Severity of the Treaties. ment you met with from her Father with me out Compassion. You remember, Honour, to how I bid you keep up your Spirits, and boc that Ways might be found out to make you me · Amends. You remember my Words; don't fals ' you?'- 'Yes, my Lady, I do, and with at a a great many Acknowledgments to your Re-Ladyship. I am for ever bound to obey er-' your Ladyship's Commands,' faid Honour. Vav Well then, Honour, continued Lady Belt is. ' laston, I have found out the Way to make Jo-' you Amends for every Thing, if you will my be punctual to your Promise to follow my v of ' Commands. I have been deceived by Mr. be-· Jones; he has slighted me, and thinks ever ' himself the happiest Creature in the you World, as fure he is, while he enjoys the ght · peaceable Poffession of my Cousin Sophia. nar-· But I am resolved—I conjure you to keep veit an eternal Secret.—I am resolved to any make his Life unhappy. I know you do Vell ' not love him, he's fuch a whoring Dog. was Sophia told me, you had often persuaded Difher to relinquish him.—Nor indeed can it vanbe faid, that Sopbia has requited you actold cording to your Deferts. You'ventured all u ato gratify her Passion: and see, now she has ight you

50 The History of Tom Jones Book I. gained her Point, poor Honour is not fo much as thought on. Nay, fhe did not name you to me, during my long Visit this Afternoon.—But I could not take my Leave, without shewing my Resent-· ment at fuch Ingratitude.—And what do ' you think, Honour? Do not take it ill, my ' good Girl. I do not mean to discard you from my Favour, nor yet from my Service; -but I infifted she should re-instate vou about her Person, in your former ' Place; and I pressed her so far, that she at last, but with much ado, was obliged to yield to my Sollicitations. Now Hoonour, I-, must insist upon your Ac-' quiescence to my Proposal. You shall still retain all the Profits of my Waiting-wo-· man: but you must go and offer your · Service, and accept of my Cousin's Place; though she should behave never so coldly. And when you are established, all I request in Return for my Favours, is to follow my Directions. Never be reconciled cordially to Jones your Master: for his Scheme was to let you starve, -you know it:-and inform me of the most minute Occurrences in his Family.'

Mrs. Honour, whose selfish Nature, tinctured very deep with Pride, had always laid Ch. 7. in bis MARRIED STATE. it down as a Rule of all her Actions to look first at Home, presently closed with the advantageous Proposal of Lady Bellaston;and as the best Proof of her Regard to her Ladyship, produced a Scrap of a Letter in which she had acquainted Mr. Jones of her good Luck, at the Time of being admitted into her Ladyship's Service, and expressed her Sentiments concerning her good Lady in these Words :- " To bee fur shee is won of thee best Ladis in thee Wurld, and Pepil who fafe to the Kontrari must bee veri wiket Pepil in thare Harts. To bee " fur, if ever I ave fad ani Thing of that "Kine, it as bin thru Ignorens, and I am " hartili forri for it." This attended by many Protestations of Secrefy, Obedience, and Watchfulness, gained the entire Confidence of Lady Bellaston; who after making her a Present of a small Gold Ring with her Hair in it, and a Set of Top-knots and Breast-knots, dismissed her with Orders to wait on Madam Sophia Jones, the next Morning early.

D₂ CHAP.

laid

it

now

nvention on the Rack a for one Trick re-

prevent a Discovery. The crafty Person is

but Truck and Integrity will carry a Man WHEN Mr. Jones returned from Bli-fil's Lodgings, he found his Bride at the Dreffing-table, and her Maid Honour behind her. Upon this Occasion it might have been expected, that Mrs. Honour would have exerted her loquacious Talent. But the Infincerity and Diffimulation, with which her Heart was loaded, took off the Edge of her Tongue, and instead of Joy, she rather feemed to carry Confusion in her Countenance. There is nothing like Sincerity, it is firm and substantial; there is nothing hollow or unfound in it, it is true Wisdom and Peace of Mind, it is always near at Hand, and fits upon our Lips, and is ready to drop out before we are aware. It creates Confidence in those we speak to, and is the plainest and easiest, and much the safest and most secure Way of Dealing in the World; it has less of Trouble and Difficulty, of Entanglement and Perplexity, of Danger and Hazard in it; whereas Infincerity, Cunning, and Diffimulation grow weaker and less effectual or serviceable to them that use them:

0

to

ai

ch. 8. in his MARRIED STATE 53 them; a Lye is troublesome, and sets the Invention on the Rack; for one Trick requires many more to make it good, or to prevent a Discovery. The crasty Person is always in Danger, all other Arts will fail; but Truth and Integrity will carry a Man through, and bear him out to the last, though he may live some Time in Obscurity and Distress.

The innocent undefigning Sophia, however, attributed this Confusion and Silence to her Maid's excessive Joy; and smiling at her Husband, Look, says she, Mr. Jones, how · Honour is surprized; how she is overcome with Joy to fee our happy Union.' Mr. Jones, who had never been guilty of Deceit, nor accustomed to cover his Intention with a Lye; and reflecting on the many unguarded Expressions which Honour let drop to him. at the Time she came to acquaint him of her Discharge from Miss. Sopbia's Place, sufpected her Infincerity; because he was fure The preferred her own private Gain to every thing elfe. And then he was also jealous of the intriguing Spirit of Lady Bellaston, to whose Way of Life he knew Honour had accommodated herself without Reserve: and therefore flightly replied, I am forry " Mrs. Honour cannot bear the Affliction of

54 The History of Tom Jones Book I.

our Happiness.' Mrs. Honour, perceiving the Drift of this Sarcasm, replied immediately with some Degree of Resentment, 'Sir, I should think my Case very hard, after so much Fatigue, and Disgrace, besides some Expence, in the faithful Discharge of my

Duty to my good Lady, before the became your Spoule, and all upon your Ac-

' count, I should be so slighted, and tantalized, and in a Manner bid be-gone out of her House. These last Words were accompanied with fuch a Flood of Tears, and a Fit, so artfully counterfeited that Mr. Jones recalled his Words, and left her to the Care of the Women. When she found herself delivered from his discerning Eye, she presently recollected her Spirits; and, as if the were revived with the charming Voice of Mrs. Jones, who was endeavouring to gratify her Ears with Affurances of taking her again into her Service, protested that she would sooner beg with her round the World, were it her hard Fortune to be driven to it, than live with any other Person, on any Terms whatever. Accordingly Honour was ordered to pack up, and, with Lady Bellaston's Confent, to go that very Day with the new-married Couple to their Seat in Somersetshire.

CHAP.

th

ry

no

de

ho

hi

th

th

de

6

e la partiels April 18 grown, perudificial Volument C. H.A. P. I. IX.

Mr. Allworthy's Discourse at Breakfast, on Party-Lying, Libels, Lampoons, &c.

Reakfast being ready, the Footman acquainted Mrs. Jones, that her Father, Uncle, and Spoule waited her Coming, in the Parlour, where the Conversation turned upon a ridiculous Lampoon published in the Fool upon the Word Pellam, which he very ridiculously infinuated was the fame as Palam or Balaam. The Squire, who was now perfectly fober, shewed himself wonderful witty on this low Subject. I will not however expose him too far by recording his Criticism, which univocally agreed with the Fool that published the Satyr; but I think Mr. Allworthy's Reply to him very deserving of our Attention :- I do not, fays he to Mr. Western, pretend to defend "M-rs of State in all their Actions. believe they will not undertake fo much for themselves .- They certainly are guilty of Overfights as well as other Men; and by a rash or random Stroke are sometimes ' obliged to risque one Good, to obtain ' what in their Judgment is better for the Nation. But Sir, I must discourage all Party-Lying, Libels, Lampoons, or Sa-

D4

0

The History of TOM JONE'S Book I. ' tyrs on those, that are entrusted with pub-' lic Affairs; and at the fame Time, Mr. · Jones, I shall hint at a few Observations, which may some Time or other become ' serviceable to you both in private Life, ' and stir you up against private Calumnia-' tors, who are the Pest of Society, and the Ruin of many Families. I am frequent-' ly amazed to find Men otherwise of strict · Probity, Men who would fcorn to utter ' a Falshood for their own particular Advantage, give fo readily into a fcandalous Lye, when it is become the Voice of their · Faction; yea, even when they are tho-' roughly sensible of its Falshood, in order ' to lampoon their opposite Party. I know that this political Vice, when notoriously detected, is excused, as innocent Mirth, or Words that carry no bad Intention in them, dispersed by the Multitude; but ' this cannot be allowed. For, neither the Guilt of a Lye, nor the Punishment can be diminished, much less wholly worn out, by the Multitudes of those who partake of it; because Guilt, when it spreads ' through Numbers, is not so properly di-' vided as multiplied: every one is crimi-' nal, not in Proportion to the Number of those, who are engaged with him in it, but in Proportion to the Offence which

e

r

IS

er

W

y

h,

in

ut

ne

ın

it,

ke

ds

li-1i-

of

it,

ch he he himself commits. The Division of Guilt is like that of Matter; though it ' may be separated into infinite Portions, every Portion shall have the whole Essence of Matter in it, and confifts of as many Parts, as the whole did, before it was divided into Portions; confequently, both ' the Crime and the Penalty lie as heavy ' upon every Individual of an offending Multitude, as they would upon any fin-' gle Person, who had not shared with him ' in the Fault. Neither can Multitudes ex-' empt from the Shame, which naturally ' follows the Detection of a Lye. There is ' no fuch Thing as escaping the Scandal of ' a Lye, because it is diffused amongst ' Thousands; for, though a Drop of the blackest Tincture wears away and vainishes, when mixed and confused in a con-· fiderable Body of Water; yet the Blot is ' still in it, though it is not able to disco-· ver itself, so much as when alone. ' vertheless, this, I apprehend, is a very ' great Motive to several Party Offenders, who avoid Crimes, not as they are prejudicial to their Virtue, but to their Repu-' tation or worldly Credit: which is no · less than playing the Part of an infamous · Hypocrite, who prefers the Appearance D 5

58. The History of Tom Jones Book I. of Virtue to its Reality; and regards neither the Dictates of Conscience, the Suggestions of true Honour, nor the Princi-' ples of Religion and Virtue in the Course of his own Conduct. As to the Authors of Lampoons, they are generally Men, who being angry, and not daring to put their Name to what they impose upon the Public, naturally vent their Spleen in 'News-Papers, Journals, and Magazines, whose Invectives frequently die in their Birth; but when they are written with Wit and Spirit, they, like poisoned Darts, not only give a Wound, but make it 'mortal. - What can be more base than this ungenerous Spirit, which in Secret fabs a Man's Reputation, Credit, or good Name? Or what can be more scandalous to a Government, and detestable in the Eyes of all good Men, than defamatory Pamphlets and Papers? I add, that this Race of Vermin are not only a Scandal to all Governments, but a Reproach to human Nature in General. They stir up Sorrow in the Hearts of private Persons ' raife Uneafiness among near Relations, and expose whole Families to Derision; while they themselves remain in the Dark unfeen, and undiscovered. Yet this wicked

Ch. q. in bis MARRIED STATE. 59 and ungenerous Practice is become a Kind of national Crime, it is fo much in Use with us at present. I do not decry Satyr, it is commendable, and has been of great ' Service to correct the Vices of an Age, when it makes a due Discrimination be-' tween those who are, and those who are not ' the proper Objects of it. I declaim only a-' gainst Falshood, Levelling Satyrs, and such Lampoons, as we meet with now-a-days, which are a Sort of Playing with the four ' and twenty Letters, and throwing them ' into Names and Characters, as the Fool, that lies before you, has done, without ' Sense, Wit, or Truth. Such Kind of Satyr is nothing, but Ribaldry and Billings-' gate. And, let these political Slanderers profess ever so much Regard to Truth and good Neighbourhood, they, when derected, ought to be industriously avoid-'ed by all that defire to live in Peace; because, by this Means, the Honour of Fa-' milies is ruined; the highest Posts and greatest Titles are rendered cheap and vile in the Sight of the People; the noblest 'Virtues, and the most exalted Parts, are exposed to the Ignorant and Vicious. -Wit, when not tempered with Virtue and 'Humanity, is most pernicious.' Mr. Western, who with more Complaifance than ufual,

fual, had not once interrupted Mr. Allworthy, being quite out of Patience, could no longer refrain; and starting off his Chair, Zur, Sur, says he, thut make a good Prese byterian Parson; d—n thur Politicks; let's get out this d—ned Hanoverian Town.

Hallow, Jack! get the Horses ready.'

Or CHAPPANX DEL SINT

wicked Intentions into Execution

Mrs. Honour receives ber Instructions from Lady Bellaston and Mrs. Western.

W to station at heshare Mongst too many other Instances of the great Corruption and Degeneracy of the present Age, the great, and I had almost said, the general Want of Sincerity in Conversation is none of the least dangerous. The World is grown fo full of Diffimulation and Compliment, that Men's Words are hardly any Signification of their Thoughts; and the many Examples of Deceit, which are discovered under the fine gay Clothing of friendly Professions, are so many Proofs that the old English Plainness and Sincerity, that generous Integrity of Nature, and Honesty of Disposition, which always argues true Greatness of Mind, and is usually accompanied with undaunted Courage and Resolution, is, in a great Measure, loft

loft amongst us. Who could speak more friendly than Lady Bellaston, Mrs. Western, and Honour the Lady's Woman? And yet their Expressions of Kindness and Respect only ferved to conceal the Rancour of their Hearts, and to enable them with greater Force and Success to deceive, and carry their wicked Intentions into Execution.

Thus Lady Bellaston, who, to a Resentment at Mr. Jones's rejecting her Amour, had now retained a Hatred, or rather envied his Spoule the Enjoyments, she once expected to possess at Will, was determined to feek their Ruin. Mr. Jones's Valour and Conduct in the late Action with Fitzpatrick, his happy Restoration to his Uncle's Fayour, the Discovery of his Birth, the Youth and Beauty of his Bride, and the perfect Union of their Hearts, and the general Pleafure and Harmony that appeared in every Countenance about the young married Couple, stimulated her Passions, and increased her Pain. And as the Relief of the envious Person are those Afflictions or Disappointments, which may happen to a Family, or the Perfon envied; or those Blemishes or Imperfections that discover themfelves in an illustrious Character; this Lady waited with Impatience the Issue of Mrs. Honour's Visit to Madam Jones. Mrs. Wes-· Hot tern

e

o

f

h

d

1-

e,

ft

62 The History of TOM JONES Book I. tern also was already come to hear the Success, and to concert their suture Measures; when Mrs. Honour entered with a Report perfectly agreeable to their Inclinations.

h

P

te

to

R

no

up

as

as

of

try

fo

L

po

THE WAST PROTECTED THE REFLEC While Mrs. Honour was packing up her Clothes, Lady Bellaston began: Remember, my good Girl, though you live from me, you are still my Woman: Remember you are going to do me Service: Remember this is to take all Opportunities to create Discontent, and, if possible, to ' foment Jealoufy between Jones and his · Wife, I mortally hate them. ? Nor will I ever forgive, fays Mrs. Western, the · Contempt thrown upon my Advice in the ' Affair of my Lord Fellamar. I will be revenged on them all, no Bastard shall ' inherit my Fortune, I expect, Honour, that you keep our Intentions a profound Secret, and hold a regular Correspondence ' with my good Lady, Cousin Bellaston; and do not imagine you can take any Advan-' tage of this Confidence we repose in you; for I now folemnly protest we will deny every Thing, if you prove fo false to us, and injurious to yourfelf, as to betray your . Trust.' Then Lady Bellaston gave her a proper Direction, and a Name, which she assumed, to be used for her Ladyship's, till furfurther Orders. They both gave her a handsome Present, and hurried her away to her Mistress Sophia; but charged her to present my Lady's Compliments, not to take any Notice of having seen Mrs. Western, and to gloss all her Intention, with Words of the greatest Respect,—and an entire Obedience to all her Lady's Commands.

- AND AND THE COM A P. S XI. W. Shakan and

rodressed in the boats a desired

e

e

d

e

d

n-

1 ;

N

ıs,

ur a

he

ull

ir

Lord FELLAMAR'S Engagements with Lady
BELLASTON.

HE Character of Lady Bellaston, and the Liberties she had permitted him to take with her Cousin Sophia, under her Roof, convinced Lord Fellamar, that he had not so much Difficulty to fear in an Attempt upon either Mrs. Western, or her Ladyship, as there had been on the young Lady. And as he had imprudently cast away a great Part of his Estate in the modish Foible of the Gentry at the Gaming Table, his Lordship resolved to try his Fortune with one of these Ladies, who, in the Opinion of the World, possessed much more Riches than Beauty,

His Addresses were first tendered to Lady Bellasson. To which his Lordship was de-

64 The History of TOM JONES Book I.

611

4

4

40

63

4

45

6

6

6

111

111

6

.

· 1

. (

4/1

6]

· r

" (

·]

· t

. C

6 F

· Mr.

determined from the very Moment the Marriage of Miss Sophia was publickly known. I need not tell you with what Sarisfaction that Coquette discovered his Lordship's Intentions. She never purposed to yield her Liberty and Fortune to any Person; having long calmed her Passions, as Opportunity ferved, in a private Way. But the Instant Lord Fellamar broke his Mind to her in an honourable Way, and the found him in Earnest, and ready to engage in every Adventure to gain her Affections, her Ladyship once more refolved to make him the Inftrument of her Vengeance. And therefore, contrary to her usual Behaviour, at such a Proposal, which was to revile and despise those that talked to her of Marriage, her Ladyship received his Address with great Civility and Tokens of her good Liking. But fays she, My Lord, you must never expect my Heart entirely, till you affift " me in taking Vengeance on that Jones,that Jones, who is the Cause of all my · Sorrow, and the Rival of your best Affections. Lord Fellamar, as one thunderstruck, continued filent with his Eyes fixed on the Ground for a Minute, when recollecting himself, he replied: 'My Lady! Your Commands touch my Honour. I

· have no just Cause of Complaint against

n

r

y

it

n

1-

1.

P

1-

e,

a

i-

g.

er

ft

y

n-

es

e-

7 !

At Ir.

" Mr. Jones; but he rather might refent my Rivalship. He was in Possession of the Lady's Affections, long before I ever faw her. And to do her Justice, Mis Sophia 'never gave me the least Encouragement to expect her Affections. He indeed was represented to me in a very low Character, no better than a Vagabond; and taking this Representation on your Lady-'ship's Word, I employed an Officer to ' press him, as such, into the Sea-Service; though my Intention was frustrated by the · Accident you are too well acquainted with for me to repeat. But as I have always preserved my Reputation with strict Honour, I no fooner was informed of his · Quality, and discovered my own egregious ' Mistake, than I grew very uneasy concerning the Part I had acted, and thought it " my Duty to make him the best Satisfac-' tion in my Power, for the Injury I had ' done him; and therefore I exerted my Interest to procure his Enlargement.— ' How then, Madam, can I, in Point of Ho-' nour, raise up any more Trouble to this ' Gentleman?' Gentleman! replies the ' Lady: no more a Gentleman than Will ' the Coachman, -I dare fay, not fo good a one.—He's a Son of a Whore.—And I'll be revenged on him, That I will. And 66 The History of TOM JONES Book I. ' if your Lordship's Honour stands in your Way, in Truth you will stand in your own Light. I will never put myfelf and ' Fortune into the Power of a Man, that ' is afraid to defend my Honour.' 'What ' then Madam, fays my Lord, Has Mr. Jones ' attacked your Honour? If fo I am devoted to your Ladyship's Commands, -Plf ' fend him a Challenge this Moment, and ' leave him not, till he has explated his Guilt with his last Blood.' Lady Bellafton, with an artful Smile, suddenly replied, 'No, my Lord, no; it is beneath your Quality to give fuch a Varlet the Oppor-'tunity to ennoble his Sword, it may be, in' your Blood.-You know what he did to that Irish Master of Defence, Fitzpatrick. - Did not he sheathe one Half of his Sword ' into his Body? And shall I venture your Life; all that I regard in the World? · My Lord, I am almost ashamed to own 'my Passion for you. But your Readiness' to defend my Honour demands-Shall I "venture your Life against his? No: Nor do I crave his Blood.—I would only pu-'nish him, in the midst of his good Fortune, and secrete from him the Hand that gives him the Blow. And I have already thought how this may be done by your Lordship, so as both to conceal my Refentment,

Ch

· fe

· tl

· n

· h

re

· d

6 0

" al

· th

· A

·

c Ce

. 0

e ti

c ri

COL

c g

· I

· h

4 (

«ih

. 0

· I

· I

· y

· W

Ea

Lo

You

' fentment, and preserve your Honour from the least Tarnish. Was not Jones com-' mitted on Suspicion of Murder? And, is he not enlarged upon your Lordship's Parole of Honour? If the Irishman should ' die of his Wounds; or of a Fever occasioned by them; Is he not to take his Tri-'al? Did not the Evidences depose before ' the Magistrate, that Jones drew first? ' And, if so, is he not liable to be hanged? ' How then can your Lordship look unconcerned at his Proceedings? He, conscious of his own Guilt, and afraid of the Justice that hangs over his Head, is preparing to withdraw out of your Power; -nay, for what I know, he's already gone to hide himself. And then your · Honour will fuffer indeed. So that you

have nothing to do but to fend proper Officers in Quest of him, and recommit him into the Hands of Justice. Your

1

r

?

n

S

I

r

1-

It

y

lr

-

t,

own Honour, as well as the Laws of the Land, requires it. Confequently, all that

'I demand of your Lordship, is to secure yourself from any scandalous Imputations,

which Jones's Escape may cast upon you. Lady Bellaston expressed herself with that Eagerness, and yet seeming Fondness for my Lord's Person, that the old Argument, You do not love me, if you do deny me this Re-

quest,

The History of Tom Jones Book I. quest, prevailed. A Female Argument, which though at first only used to obtain a Trisle, has been found by Experience to oblige unhappy Men, that give Way to it, to refign the Cause even of their Country, and of their Honour, upon the like trifling Occasion. And when a deceitful Woman supposes that a Man's Heart is in her Power, and builds her Demands upon an Opinion, that her Lover cannot refift any of her Infinuations, though never fo much against his Interest and Inclination; she seldom fails destroying the good Effects the following his own Way might have upon his Honour and Fortune, by interposing her Power over him, in Matters wherein they cannot influence him, but to his Disparagement and Loss. Yet nothing is so difficult in human Life, as to be Proof against the Importunities of a Woman a Man loves, when the covers and difguifes many malicious Purposes with a counterfeit Passion of disfimulate Sorrow and Unquietness of Mind. It is always known that Women are ever too hard for us upon a Treaty; and indeed it is childish to argue with one, whose Looks and Gestures are more prevalent with us, than our Reasons and Arguments can be with her; that has no other View

Ch tha or

De que tati Mr inst

Ord of

was

Mi

o ing who per in aw

no gre

Ne

Ch. 12. in his MARRIED STATE. 69 than to gratify her own Ambition, Malice, or Envy.

1

e

d

)-

1,

1-

Is

g

oer

ot nt

u-

nen

us

if-

d.

er

n-

se

nt

ots

w

an

Therefore Lord Fellamar, without further Deliberation, hurried to execute this Request of the Lady's with as much Precipitation, as he had before endeavoured to press Mr. Jones. The Officers of Justice were instructed to surround his Lodgings, and to seize him with the greatest Brutality, as he was stepping into the Coach. And they were very punctual in the Execution of their Orders, to the great Surprize and Concern of Mr. Jones, his Relations and Friends.

CHAP. XII.

Mr. Jones burried away to Prison, and his Discharge.

Source Western was rid on before with his Servant, and Mr. Jones was following his Uncle Allworthy into the Coach, when Half a Dozen terrible Fellows stopped him short, one of whom seizing of him in the King's Name, the rest dragged him away without giving him Leave to ask the Meaning of such rough Treatment. Which not only threw his Bride and Uncle into great Consusion, but alarmed the whole Neighbourhood, who presently began to guess

70 The History of Tom Jones Book I.

guess there was some Secret in this Arrest: and one that pretended to know more Politics than his Neighbours, positively affirmed, that Mr. Jones was Lord Elebo, who had escaped the Army in the North, and was trying to make his Escape into France, or some other Place of Safety, from the Justice of the Nation, which pursued and had overtaken him. This Report ran like wild Fire, and gained Credit with every Body; but though a few Weeks before those very People had been under the greatest Consternation and Terror at the near Approach of the Rebel Army to this Capital, imagining that the Rebels would change their Religion, subvert their Constitution, rob them of their Property, and murder those that should oppose them; they now forgetful of their past Danger, and of the Trouble and Charge the Nation had been at, were fo inclining to a mistaken Sort of Pity and Compassion, that instead of demanding Justice, a Debt due from the Criminal to the Public, they cried out for Mercy, and were almost ready to impeach the Equity of our Laws for defending them from Injury and Wrong. However they, in this Particular, were foon undeceived; for after Mrs. Jones was taken Care of, Mr. Allworthy followed the Prisoner, and found his Acculation

fly Pi ca

de planting for better better

W

th in d fe

fif

n E t:

Ch. 12. in his MARIR I ED STATE. 71 cusation no more than a Presumption of his slying from his Bail, which being published, put an immediate Stop to all their political Comments on this Occasion.

I.

)-

1-

10

d

e,

f-

id

d

.

y

1-

h

i-

ir

b

se.

r-

1-

t,

1-

1-

al

7,

y

1 ...

is

1

-

-

n

Mr. Jones, before the Justice, where he was brought by Virtue of a Scape Warrant, denied the Fact; and besides, he fairly pleaded, that Fitzpatrick was recovered of his Wounds, and had been abroad. He alfo enquired by whose Information he had been thus surprized? The Justice, who, we will suppose, was an entire Stranger to the Cause of this Information; but perceiving there would be no Want of Money to disengage the young Gentleman from this feeming Embarrassment, enlarged very much upon the Injustice of flying from a Bail; evaded every Attempt to clear up the Affair of which Mr. Jones was unjustly accufed, and with fullen Gravity gave to understand it was in his Power alone, either to release the Prisoner, or to prevent his Journey, and force him out of the Arms of his Bride. Mr. Allworthy presently dived into the Justice's Meaning, and wifely concluding that no Time was to be loft, where dark Schemes were hatching; for which he unjustly, though naturally, suspected Mr. Blifil and Dowling; and therefore Fitzpatrick, who

Book I.

who had been fearched out by a special Mesfenger, being arrived, he made both him and the Justice easy with a convenient Prefent; and they, to the great Mortification of his Enemies, who did not appear in Person, granted him and his Bail a free and final Discharge.

The Conclusion.

OUR Work is long,' the Critics cry: 'tis true,

And lengthens still, to take in Fools like you. One judges as the Weather distates; right. The - is at Noon, and wrong at Night.

Another judges by a surer Gage,

An Author's Principles, or Parentage: Another judges by the Writer's Look, Another judges for he bought the Book. Some judge, their Knack of judging Wrong to keep;

Some judge, because it is too soon to Sleep. Thus all will judge, and with one single Aim, To gain themselves, not give the Writer Fame : None are at Leisure, others to Reward, They scarce will Damn, but out of Self-regard.

in the second is also deficielled a deficielled

BOOK

a and will critically

same harman and And Best same our set

High S of Con O. R. Y

shing to OF is appointed to 1.

TOM JONES

THE

FOUNDLING,

IN HIS

MARRIED STATE.

BOOK II,

CHAP. I.

Remarks on Duelling.

HEN Honour supports virtuous
Principles, and runs parallel with
the Laws of God and our Country, it cannot be too much cherished and
E encou-

74 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

Q

tic

is

CO

fe

it

Sv

fe

110

po

m

le!

Bi

SI

de

m

lik

ar

W

or

tiz

P

Gin

th

ri

W

encouraged; but when the Dictates of a mistaken Honour are contrary to those of Religion and Equity, they, by giving wrong Ambitions, and false Ideas of what is good and laudable, become the greatest Depravations of human Nature, and should therefore be exploded and feverely punished by all Governments, and driven out as the Bane of human Society in General.—Thus I would have that barbarous Practice of Duelling treated; though this dreadful Action, by long Impunity, is become honourable, and the Refusal to engage in it dishonourable. For, by this wicked Cultom of daring to Death, the greatest Act of the human Mind, the forgiving of Injuries and Affronts, is become vile and shameful; the Rules of good Society and virtuous Converfation are inverted; the Loofe, the Vain, and the Impudent, infult the Careful, the Discreet, and the Modest; the Sharper is put in Competition with a Gentleman of the first Rank; and a brave Man sometimes has fallen by the Hand of one below that of a common Hangman.

Therefore Men that place a right Esteem upon Honour, should always, especially in this mad Age we live in, guard it with that true Virtue, which is never to let one of their

their Actions stoop below the Level of their Quality, nor be deceived in their true Notion of Honour. For, when this Caution is once removed, it has been found that the Name of Honour has been profituted to countenance the very worst Actions of Pilfering, Lewdness, and Murder, by placing it in Profit, Pleasure, and the Point of a Sword. On which Occasions it is well obferved, there is no Difference between Honour and Savageness; Between a Pickpocket and a Peer, and between a Gentleman and a Butcher; who persuade themfelves that Honour confifts in Slaughter. But these Dealers in human Blood, who turn Slaughter into Diversion, are not only condemned by the Laws of the Land, which mark them with Infamy and Shame, but likewise by the Law of God, and so at once are outlawed by Religion and the State. Which double Excommunication, certainly, one would think, fhould effectually ftigmatize and abolish so vile and dishonourable a Practice. Truly a courageous Man's great Glory is neither to fear, nor to strike Terror into others, without just Provocation. It is the diffinguishing Character of a Man of Merit, to be ever active in laudable Pursuits; while that of every gay Coxcomb of Fire is to

in

at

of

ir

The History of Tom Jones Book II.
to be confidently in the Wrong, and dare
to perfish in it, contrary to Reason and good
Manners. A grand over yet tod, flatym sland
a normal to ma I segmed you to the

But Cuftom has ennobled Revenge, and fome may reply, as by Fact, they put it in Practice, that we had better be out of the World, than out of the Fashion. Well, but hearken to Reason; is not the King the only Fountain of Honour? Yet it does not appear that his Majesty ever made over to Custom this Prerogative of his Crown. And, what is that Custom so much insisted on? Is it any better than a Club of Desperadoes, without Religion, without Confcience; a Pack of Renegado Christians, who are a Scandal to their Profession, and a Shame to their Nature, and vote Morder a brave Action. How shameful then is it to obtrude this depraved Custom of a few, whose Judgments are as false as their Principles, and their Opinions as depraved as their Manners, for the true Standard of Honour and Bravery? Must we look upon Perjury, Robbery, and Licentiousness as innocent, lawful, and creditable Vocations, because they are common, and extolled by Rascals, Highwaymen, and Debauchees? -Befides, what can be more extravagantly foolish.

foolish, than the Punctilio's of a Duellist? If I am affronted is there no Way to redress myself, but by provoking my Enemy to tilt at my Lungs? I am of Opinion, a Gentleman would act more confiftent with his Nature and his Honour, to put up an Affront, than throw himself in the Way of a Stab or a Halter; for, that may possibly be retrieved; but a Wound in the Heart, or a disjointed Neck, can never be cured. And I am persuaded that they who would rather take a Man's Life, than his ingenuous Acknowledgment of his Fault, have no Right to true Reason, or to solid Fame; and their Courage is an Imposture made up of Cowardice, Falshood, and Want of Understanding; for the courageous Mind, however enraged against an Enemy, feels its Resentments fink and vanish away, when the Object of its Wrath falls into its Power, and lies at its Mercy. It is to no Purpose to urge, I have Right on my Side; for, should Fortune take the Part of my Antagonist, I am undone. Right is a dull Weapon, unless Skill and good Luck manage it.-A Duel is an ill Distemper to die of, though our modern Heroes, that defy Heaven, may think it a genteel one; and I am pretty fure those Martyrs of Honour will be much discomposed when they find their E 3 ReReception, in the next Life, falls thort of their Expectation; in which our Treatment will answer our Actions, not our Birth, and an innocent Clown will meet with Respect, when a guilty Prince shall be rejected with Contempt.

really suspected the AcHabinos & spor

What passed in Town after Mr. Jones's Discharge, and his Journey to Portsmouth.

would resolved never to Half Turk HE unexpected Releasement of Mr. Jones threw Lady Bellaston into the greatest Fury, as soon as Lord Fellamar re-· lated what had passed. What, faith she, fhall that Country Clod escape at last? . The Man who dared to attack my Chaffity, and with more Impudence than an " Irish Bully, accuse me of criminal Converfation with him in private Lodgings. ' My Lord, I almost suspect your Pretences of Courtship; and if you defire to con-' vince me that there has been no Collusion on your Side, in the Favour Jones has now received in the Face of Justice, draw your Sword in my Defence .- Oh! there is no other Way left to bring down that ambitious wicked Heart. While he lives, mine can have no Reft .- It is doing

I

ti

g

ti

' the

the Variet too great Honour, for your Lordship to stoop to much below the Level of your Quality ; but I must be delivered from this Diffraction. Thope there will be no Danger in defending my Innocence. - It is half the Battle to fight in a ' just Cause.' Whether Lady Bellaston really suspected that she was imposed upon by my Lord Fellamar in this Affair, whose Honour had boggled at her first Proposal of it! Or, as it is more likely, being previously refolved never to marry, the tried this Expedient, in Hopes of being dilingaged, by the Sword of Mr. Jones, from the Promise made to Lord Fellamar; or at least of being revenged on our Hero by fome lucky Pulh of his Lordship's Sword; her Ladyship expressed herself fo roundly upon the Subject, that Lord Fella ar, perceiving there could be no Access to her Eftate without it, shewed a great Deal of Eagerness to pursue her Directions; and a Let. ter of Appointment was immediately dictated by her Ladyship, in the following Terms:

Fo Mr. Thomas Jones, at his Lodgings in Arlington-Street.

SIR, Berkley-Square, Tuef. 11 o'Clock.

Have been informed of your Ingratitude to me, your best Friend and BeE 4 'nefactor;

e

80 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

nefactor; who, at a Time albyour Rela-

tions had cast you off, and nothing but

Destruction and an ignominious Death

threatened you, obtained your Enlarge-

ment upon my Parole of Honour; which

Honour you have endeavoured to frain,

first, by attempting to flee from Justice;

and fince that, by clandestinely procuring

a Discharge from the injured Person, with-

out considering how far my Honour was

engaged; and therefore I demand Satif-

· faction, and expect you will answer my

Refentment, at the Point of my Sword

To-morrow Morning, at-

· FELLAMAR.

By which Means the Lady kept herself still in the Dark, and at Liberty to play what Game she pleased, according as her Scheme turned out in Consequence of this Challenge. But I need not tell you what a Consternation appeared in every Face at the Receipt of this Challenge; it is not so easily expressed, as conceived.—Mr. Janes, fired with youthful Vigour, and strongly prepossessed with the modish Defence of Honour; and withal knowing himself clear of the Imputation cast upon him by Lord Fellamar, the Memory of whose former Behaviour renewed itself a-fresh; resolved in himself

felf to give him the Meeting and Satisfaction required so but his Refentment, upon reading the Letter, carried him fo far beyand the Bounds of his usual Calmness, that his Uncle interpoled, and discovering the Truth commanded him upon his Duty; and the Regard and Love he had for his Wife, that he should not accept of the Challenge; and then turned the Messenger to the Door, with the Indignation such bloody Emissaries deserve. And then turning to his Nephew, whom Mr. Allworthy perceived too desirous to break loose into the Vice of the Age, and to follow the Example of those in high Life, endeavoured to convince him, That true Quality does not lie in the narrow Compais of those, who are graced with Titles to play the Ape by Patent; whom Nature has loaded with Vices, and Chance has flung into the World with an Eschutsheon: But it triumphs most, when it conquers Vice, forgives Injuries, and despiseth causeles Affronts. Believe me, Nephew, faith he, this Lord has differed his Title to by affurning the Character of a Butcher. 4 And if you would defire to shew yourself 'a Gentleman, you must carefully avoid his Example, and copy after that real Pattern of Gentility, Mr. Nicholfon, who, driw all Speed blevel characteristic with Lett d

82 The History of Tom Janks Book IL

without the advantageous Helps of Presuccepts, for Educational carries his Birth in his very Councenance; his Gare and Mein sitell his Quality suche aboth charms and sawes, and at the fame Time demands. Love and Reverence; his Extraction glibters under all Disguises. He is reserved without Pride, and familiar without Meanness he times his Behaviour to Cincum-A stances, and knows when to stand on Tipstroe, wand nowhen to floop Then oven would foon get clear of the Foible of miftaken Honour, and adopt no Actions but fuch as are truly great, and tend to do 5 Good; and not to destroy Life, and ruin Families, Fire wow I De knowled . HVI or

In the mean Time Mrs. Jones with a Flood of Tears, and the most endearing Persuasions, added great Force to Mrs Allworthy's Representations and Commands. So that he consented to order the Coach immediately, and being all ready, they reached that Night as far as the Red Lion at Brentford, according to the Appointment of Squire Western; and next Morning, as they were preparing to proceed on their Journey homewards, the Inn was on a sudden filled with my L. Brents Retinue posting with all Speed for Portsmouth, to pleasure him-

himself and Friends with the Prospect and Diversions of the Royal Navy, then lying at Spubead, and ready to annoy our Encmies, and to defend our Coafts Mr. Allworthy and the Souire could not conceal. themfelves, their Servants presently mixing with that noble Lord's, their Neighbour, and therefore halted to pay their Compliments; and as his Lordship was no Stranger to the Difgrace of Tom Jones, and the Elopement of Mils Sophia from his old Foxhunting Companion, Squire Western, her Father, in Pursuit of her Lover; they informed his Lordship of the Strangeness of the Event, That Jones was not only restored to Mr. Allworthy's Favour, but being proved his Nephew, was declared his Heir, and married to Miss Sophia Western, with her. Father's Confent, though he, after pursuing his Daughter in vain through the Country, had made that sudden Trip to London, to prevent their Marriage. The young Couple were then introduced, and after a hearty Felicitation, his Lordship, well judging that fuch an Invitation could not be difagreeable to them, who had been bred up in an inland Place, very courteously defired their Company aboard the Fleet, where he was hafting to divert his Friends. od T. all Specia & car mouth to pleature

84 The History of TOM JONES Book II.

tl

The Invitation was accepted with the Address, as proposed; and indeed how could fuch a Favour be rejected, when offered by a Lord, in whom the Generous, the Wise, the Prudent, the Wonderful, and the Sublime, had taken up their Habitation, not to be concealed, but to be imparted, as it were by Sparkles, to the rest of Mankind? And though his Person was not of the tallest Make, you might read a Prince in his Af-pect, lofty by the Animation of the noble Sentiments within, yet in which there was not the least Ingredient or Appearance of Pride. His Eyes both dazzled and delighted; whoever beheld him, could not but ask themselves, what must be the inexhaustible Store of Spirits and Light within, that so profusely darted through those Casements of the Mind. Such a Companion could enliven any Conversation, and filled Mr. Jones and his Relations with great Expectations from his prodigious Vivacity, which was fo natural to my Lord; whose very Looks demanded both Love and Reverence, being the Indices to every Virtue, nourished and practifed by his truly noble Soul.

It was late in the Evening before they reached *Portsmouth*-Common, where after the Ladies were retired from Supper to their proper

proper Apartments, the Gentlemen spent the Remainder of the Evening over their Bottle, and in the Course of their Discourse the very Occasion of their Meeting gave Rife to feveral political Reflections. Mr. Allworthy asked his Lordship if the flying Reports, which for a few Days had spread Abroad of the Commotions and Refignations at Court, were true. Yes, said my Lord, the Scene is indeed shifted, and a new Set of Court-officers are introduced. But, continued he, I very much question ' whether the Public will be any Gainers by this Change.' What are they not Orthodox? ' faid Mr. Allworthy,' ' Yes, replied my Lord, I verily believe they are; but I am afraid they are tainted with that Pliancy of Temper, which a few ' Years ago corrupted the Senate, at the 'Time, they, that should have stood up with Vigour to oppose the Ministerial Schemes, deserted their Seats in Parlia-' ment; whose Principles were not loose e-' nough to come directly into the Wrong, but wanted Courage boldly to defend and affert what is just and right; which ' puts me in Mind of that false Step which tarnisheth the Memory of Lord Nattingbam, who could be excelled by none in Probity, Virtue, and the Love of his · Coun-

The History of Tom Jones Book H. 86 Country and Religion, and diffinguished his Capacity to govern, when never fo Afrenhously opposed from Abroad but 5 yet degenerated in his Courage, became spiqued and awed by a Faction at Hoffe, Sand quitted the Helm at the first Omen of a tempeltuous Sea, whereas his Buffnels should have been to have rid it out; for if a good Minister cannot prevail hims felf, he, at least, by the Post he holds, may 5 hinder others from prevailing. Well but faid Mr. Allworthy, are not Matters much mended fince the Patriots wrested the Reins of the Administration out of the Hands of the late prime Minister; a Man who, with a Complication of Vices, s had but this one Virtue, that he did not pretend to any? Every Way mercurial; he would fin up to the Height of Pleafure, yet drudge on to the last Extremity of Business; indefatigable in his Pursuits, not by Firs and Starts, but a regular Succesfion. Vaft was his Ambition, vaft was his Artifice! Mighty in Lewdness, not e less in Policies! He could fawn, lye, and flatter, and feem fincere, but never be fo!

When I represented the Borough of——,
I could observe, he never would suffer any of his Views to drop of be thrown out
of

of the House, though never so trivial. His oily, deceitful, artful Tongue could infinuate any Thing. He was bold even. Into Impudence Hic hever valued what he " Maked to be could make fure of the Prize: all his Passions fubsiding till he had reachsed the Port, whither he was bound. He never could be made angry, he was always feemingly pleafed. When foiled in sany Attempts he fell, but to rife again with the greater Force; observing the weak Side, through which he had miffed his Aim, he returned with double Vigour and double Conduct to the Affault. Many had been his Endeavours in a former Reign to get Footing at Court; but his sintricate Purpole, which was to deprive "the Subject of their Liberty, and to keep the K in his own Power, could not take Place till he, by Craft and Diffimulation, had jumbled every Thing into Confulion, in a Nation full of Jealoufies. Diwisions, and Fears. How did he pack the Senate dufflow the Voices at any Promos tion? In his Temper an admirable Tri-Subune of the People, the would Itoop to the - meanest Office; nor would he lose the most despicable Voice for Want of Amduity, Promifes, Rewards, Bribes, Hopes, in: Fears,

The History of Tom Fones Book II. Fears, Threatenings, or whatever could influence the Passions or Circumstances of those, with whom he had to deal He would play with the Gamester, be lewd with the Libertiney drunk with the Debauchee. fober with the Abstenious, full of real 'Ambiguity, and pretended Openness. His · House, his Purse, his Interest, his Trouble, were all at the Service of whomsoever was confiderable enough to be obliged by him. No Principles fo fixed, but what he endeavoured to undermine. His own ruling Principle was, That every " Man has his Price. He found the weak Side of all Mankind; those unsusceptible of Avarice, and who were only ambitious, he attacked by Grandeur, Dignities, and ' Honours; and he had Pentions for the Covetous and Poor. And yet I cannot perceive, that they, who triumph in their pulling him down, and have taken his ' Place, are either wifer, more able, or even fo deserving of the public Favour, as he. Here my Lord, who had nothing to fear from the deceased Minister, and therefore thought it impolite to interrupt his Neighbour, in drawing the Character of L-O---, could not admit of any Illustrations upon the Conduct of the governing Par-

Pears.

ty, under whom his Family held feveral confiderable Pofts and Commands and therefore cut the Convertation for this Evening very thort, with a Proposal to rife by Seven next Morning, f when, fays he, I will carry you all on Board the finest Fleet

that ever swam in the British Channel, rea-

dy to fail on fuch an important Expediti-

on, as must convince us all of the Ability and Refolution of our present Governors.

the him. Mo Principles to fixed, but

and commended the Approximation of the a

A Night's Conversation among the Ladies.

s Signaliac Americal, more, concernable HE Ladies who had withdrawn themfelves after Supper, being acquainted with Mrs. Jones's Adventure, could not deny their Curiofity the Gratification of accompanying her to her Chamber, to pass away the Evening in a little Chit-chat upon fo amorous a Subject. The Ladies were nearly allied to the noble Lord above-mentioned, and were both married. Their Names, as well as I can recollect, were Con-Stantia and Teresa. When these Ladies found themselves alone, they heartily congratulated Mrs. Jones upon her Nuptials, and highly applauded her Constancy and Duty, never to give up her Liberty and Fortune

The History of TOM JONES Book H. to a Man she could not love, and never to marry any Person against her Father's Confene. The innocent Bride received their Compliments with bar becoming Modesty, land at their sirgent Request, gave them a true and full Relation of the Hardships the had fuffered; and the most providental Event that had delivered her out of them all and put her in Possession of all her Soul defired. at the very Time when the could forefee nothing but Destruction and Ruin contriving against both herself and Mr. Jones. So great and so just is that God, who seeing the Hearts of the Innocent, defends their Canfe. delivers them out of Danger, grants their Petitions, and punisheth their Enemies with an invisible Hand to For this I can fav. Mr. Jones never attacked my Virtue, nor I never intended to disobey my Father, by marrying him, contrary to his Comfomandis-nid Oblibus is minowed and may

At these last Words, which Mrs. Jones spoke with such an Accent as indicated her inward Satisfaction at the Remembrance of their strict Attachment to Virtue in their whole Courtship; and a real Belief that the sulfilling of their Desires was the just Reward of their Virtue; Madam Constantia fetched a heavy Sigh. Oh I said Constantia, could

could I enjoy my Soul with the Comforts that delight your Breast, Mrs. Jones, how happy thould I be! How would it add to the Pleasures which daily invite me to be chearful : But my whole Life is imbittered with that loathforme Pill of Difobedience; a Difobedience to the best of Parents ;- I fcrupled nothing to gratify my Love. But though my Schemes fucceeded to my Wish, and my prudent Father stooped at last to receive my Submission, and gave the in Marriage, rather than expose my Misconduct and Shame, into which I had been artfully drawn to force his Confent; the fame all-feeing Eye, which has bleffed your Obedience and Virtue, pursues me with severe Justice.
L' cannot indeed complain of a morose, or even of a flighting Hufband. I poffets a · large Effate, I am laid under no Restraints in my Expences, and I really am treated with more Diversions, and crowded with more Attendants than I defire. But I am for ever tortured with Remorfe, with ' Jealoufy; fo dangerous a Thing it is to deviate from the Paths of Virtue.' Then bursting out into a violent Fit of Passion, I was seduced into the Paths of Destruction; my Actions will never bear the Reflection of Realon; Actions that will re-· proach

proach my Conscience for ever. I am distracted with the Memory of what is past, Oh! could my Tears wash away my Guilt, and restore me back to Virtue!

My Fault is past: But oh! What Form of Prayer SHAKESPEAR.

Curse be on the Maxims of the World, and that Impropriety of Language, that would disguise Disobedience with the Names of Love and Necessity. Oh! had I been but singular, unpolite, and unsashionably good, I had kept my Peace, and justified myself to my own Conscience.—It was but this Morning, while my unfaithful Husband was busy with his Groom, that I intercepted a fresh Voucher of his straying from my Bed.—This is a Letter from one of his cast-off Mistresses, —it may be some poor deluded Virgin.

"YOUR absenting from my Compa"Your for some Days past, and the
"positive Intelligence I have had of your
"sudden Departure from Ayres-street into
the Country, have thrown me into great
Per-

" Perplexity of Mind, and Doubts of your Sincerity. Should my Suspicions, be " groundless, I hope to see you this Evening, as usual; But, if on the contrary, " you have deserted me, permit me to re-" mind you, That you first infinuated " yourfelf into my Affections, with Pro-" fessions of Esteem for my Person: You " then persuaded me that the Law of Na-" ture, as well as the Custom of many " Nations, and most Religions, allowed " double Marriages. You swore that to " have me for your Wife was the ultimate " of all your Wishes; that you never could " taste the Joys of Life, till you possessed " me as fuch. Why are you now fo "changed? Have I been guilty of any " Fault to render me less amiable in your "Sight, but that alone, which an Excess " of Love, a deceived Opinion, and a " Readiness to oblige you, caused me to " commit?—Good God! are you refolv-" ed to prove that all that has been invent-" ed of the Ingratitude and Perjury of your " Sex falls short of the Truth in you? " Am I to be made the Sacrifice of your " betraying Vows, and counterfeit Flames? "Oh! how vaftly different in your Sex " are Love and Friendship? The latter, " ashamed to be too much obliged, en-" deavours

94 The History of Tom Jones Book II. "deavours still to repay what it receives: The former fluns and flees from the "Giver, and, having obtained its Defire, contemns the Bounty! How monthous is it to Reason and Reflection, That " Love should beget Hate? That no lon-" ger than Indifference in our Sex hiblifts, "Desire can live in yours? It is not yet a "full Month, since, deceived by your Artifice, I have yielded up my Honour, " and am already abandoned to Despair " and Shame. How can you, dare you, " treat me in this Manner? To be five " Days already, without feeing me, ill-fuits " with those vehement Professions you "have often made of an everlatting Paf-"fion. But to pack up your Alls, and be gone, will admit of no Excuse. Think wyou I want a Soul to refent it? No: By " my Wrongs, I will not bear fuch Treatment. Be affured, I am a right Woman; extreme in all my Passions: And as I have scrupled neither Conscience on nor Reputation to gratify my Love, I " shall as little hefitate to perform what "my Revenge demands.—You have a "Wife but too justly suspicious of your " Conduct; she shall be informed of all: " Not one Tittle shall pass untold : I va-" lue not what shall become of me, but " Shall

"Inall rather pride myself in being ex"posed, when I consider, that by being
"so, I inslict the worst of Punishments on
"you; such as domestic Jars, and the un"ceasing Clamour of a Tongue, who
"wants but such a Proof to become the
"Plague of your Life, and which you
"must be doomed to hear.—Clear your"self, therefore, if there be a Possibility
of it: Convince me that you are not
that perjured Wretch, your late Behaviour has represented you to my Heart:
"Restore me to that Repose you have too
"long disturbed, and yourself to the Arms
"and Heart of her, who, in spite of her

"Your true and faithful

"Indignation, still wishes, with the utmost

"Warmth, to continue

ormer discussions la "Phys.Lis.",

Where you may discern such a Scene of Iniquity, that must convict him of trisling with the Laws of God, and of striking at the Root of all social Virtues. Thus he that once was the Object of all my Desire, is become the Bane of my Happiness: And my Contrivances to desceive my Father, for his Sake, have only ferved

96 The Hiltory of TOM JONES Book II.

ferved to make me miferable. Oh, what

" Course shall I take to feek for Relief?-

I forfook my Duty, how can I expect

Redrefs from Heaven ?

The young innocent Mrs. Jones did not pretend to enter into any absolute Reasoning and Advice upon fo critical a Subject, in her little Experience of a Marriage-state: But the Tenderness of her Nature forced her to sympathize with a few Tears in Madam Constantia's Distress. At the same Time her Heart glowed with Joy, for having adhered fo ftrictly to her Duty in the Case of Matrimony, the Breach of which, she was convinced, by the Example before her, would at some Time or other have turnit into Sorrow. But, faid she, Madam, ' if you have no Objection, as to his Secre-' cy and Prudence, I would advise you to confult my Uncle Allworthy upon this e melancholy Affair: And, as I understand we all are to cross the Country, and re-' turn to Somersetsbire together, there can-' not want a fufficient Opportunity to do ' it, while the rest of the Gentlemen divert ' themselves in Hunting; it will be easy for you to take his Advice, under the · Colour of paying me a Visit; who shall

Madam Terefa then began, Oh, my dear Constantia! every one thinks the Burthen they bear to be much the heaviest. I am fenfible you are ill used: I have been privy to many of your Hufband's · Follies. But what is your Mifery when compared to mine? It is true, I cannot avail myself of that Quality and Fortune, you was born to: But I have the fame Senfibility, subject to the same Infirmities and Passions, to the same De-' fires and Aversions.-My Heart was fixed on the most deserving Orlando, -with him I could have fuffered the greatest · Tribulations.—But my Parents, who knew ' my Affections were placed on that Dar-' ling of my Soul, preferred Wealth to ' Merit, and imagined, that by making " me great they made me bappy; and com-' manded me, in spite of all my Tears and Prayers, to give my Hand to Rufticus. Behold then, and let it, Madam Constantia, confole you, that you are not the ' most miserable. Believe me, the Disappointment of mutual Wishes is infinitely f more terrible, than the Combating of a fingle Woe. You have the Man you love; though

98 The History of Tom Jones Book II. c though he is not so grateful to return your Affections as he ought. But I am destined to a double Misery, of quitting s all I loved, and devoting myself to the s very Object of my Hate. Oh! what a Shock to Nature, to be confined in loathed Embraces?——To aid detefted Raptures, and, by tyrannic Duty, be compel-! led to take Delight in my own Wretchedness - This is real Misery. - I am forced to difguife my Aversion. - Misery which cannot be comforted, either by Duty, Virtue, or Advice.-No Words can give a Name to it, nor Thought, un-· feeling it, conceive.—And yet this I bear in Defiance of all those vain Arguments, which Passion has suggested to persuade · me, contrary to that indifpensable Obedience, owing to those that gave me Being.—In this alone I confole myfelf, I have done my Duty.—As all I have was theirs, they, doubtless, had a Right to dispose of me; and, as their Determianation has not fallen in with my Inclinations, Refignation must be my Practice, and · Patience my Study.' Madam Teresa concluded her Tale with a Flood of Tearsbut, even then, shewed such a Resolution to bear up under her disagreeable Station, Titlet Naviguen os Jugar

Haghla Xa as a sec

p

u

e

at

he

Ch. 4. in his MARRIED STATE. 99
that Mrs. fones, ever after, held her in great Esteem.

all Lloved, and devoting myfelf to the very Objector (Ay ALH O.Ohl what a

Remarks on a SPITHEAD Expedition.

THE rosy-fingered Morning had now unbarred the Gates of Light, and, decked in golden Vestments, had begun her Progress over the eastern Hills, and, topping the watery Main, displayed the Wonders of the Deep, when my Lord B—n informed his Guests of the Time of Tide, and genteely summoned them to attend him to the neighbouring Shore.

r

s,

le e-

e-

1

as

to

ni-

ti-

nd

on-

-

ion

on,

hat

About half an Hour brought them to the Boat: When, as if she had been dropped into another World, Mrs. Jones, now under my Lord's particular Care, delighted with the Sight and Noise of the Ships and Seamen, expressed her great Surprize at every Object that appeared round about her. 'I cannot, said she, enough admire the Ingenuity of Mortals that have raised such wooden Towers on the Waters.' To which my Lord was pleased to reply, Madam, the Art of Navigation is superior to all others. What can excel the

Too The History of Tom Jones Book H. Architecture of those Men of War before us? And how can we fufficiently 1 admire the Courage and Agility of the Sailors?—A Race of Men, who in all their Actions would perfuade us, that they are more than Mortals!-They contemn · Heat and Cold, Hunger and Thirst: They remain intrepid in the midft of the most aftonishing Dangers, when both the Winds and the Seas are at War. And though Sheets of Lightning defcend; the Moon be obscured; the Stars seem extinguished by the Tempest; the rattling 4 Thunder bellow throughout the Sky; all Things be filled with Horror and Defpair; and the dangerous Rocks, and devouring Sands, feem ready to break their Ships in Pieces, and swallow them up; They meet them all with Resolution and undaunted Courage.-But-I cannot hide their Faults.—Even in the very Moment of Destruction, when their Vessel frikes, and the rolling Waves rush greedily to devour them, these Men, who feem more indebted to Providence for their Safety, than other Men, mingle their very Prayers with Blasphemies: . They will invoke the Name of God with · Horror, calling upon him, at every trifling Moment, to destroy and reprobate them

Ch. 4. in bis MARRIED STATE. 101

them to Eternity: and as they have cast

off the Fear of God, so, I can affure you,

they regard no Man's Person; and you

will foon be convinced, by too many In-

flances, of this new-invented Vice, before

you have done viewing the Navy before

you.

d

e

-

g

e-

e-

ir

);

nc

ot

0-

Tel

ee-

ho

for

gle

es:

ith

tri-

em

Do all these, said Mr. Jones, belong to the King? No, replied my Lord. But even the Merchant-ship, which you see to Windward ploughing the Waves, is only to be diftinguished from a Ship of War by her Bulk and Number of Men and Guns: for her Poop and Stern glitter with Gold; her Masts are decked with Streamers; and other imitated Ornaments make her appear magnificent. Then Mrs. Jones interrupted his Lordship with an Admiration of the Beauty of the Fleet, to which they now approached very near, 'They all feem in a vast Hurry, continued fie; what are they doing?" And some of them hoisting Sail, she asked, Of what Use is so much Linnen, fastened with Cords, that trembles in the · Wind, and is but, with Struggling, made ' obedient to the Hand?' 'That Linnen. replied his Lordship, are Sails; and, according to the Sea Phrase, a favourable 102 The History of TOM JONES Book N.

" Gale being just sprung up, they spread

them before the Wind, which, filling the

whitened Canvas, carries them swift, al-

· most as Imagination, from the Haven

' where they have lain wind-bound for

fome Time, to their defired Port; which,

for Expedition, far exceeds any other Way

of Travelling .- This is the Admiral's

· Ship, the Sovereign of the Seas, into

which, Madam, permit me to conduct

you fafe. It is block tomor need earl on w

The Day being almost spent, and the Ladies quite tired with their marine Entercainment and Hurry, in which the whole Fleet was in, during the whole Day, my Lord conducted them back to their Lodgings: when Mrs. Jones, after a most respectful Apology for what she was about to fay, declared, 'That the never would go aboard another Fleet: Where there is ' nothing but Pride and Oppression, Riot and Blafphemy. I am glad we are got e ashore, and released from their Disorders.—I found your Lordship's Words very true. - Good Heaven! how beautiful in Prospect! how detestable in Exa-' mination, is that gaudy, gilded, mag-' nificent Prospect of a Fleet ? How proud, · how luxurious the Commanders? How · diffo-

Ch. 4. in bis MARRIED STATE. 103

diffolute, blasphemous, and servile are the ' inferior Crew? They bow lower to their · Officers, than ever they did to Heaven; whilst they, as if made of another Sort of Clay, elate and haughty, look down ' with Contempt upon the fawning Company of Curs beneath them. Pray who was that old Gentleman stretched at his Length upon the crimfon damask Couch? 'That was the Admiral, faid my Lord, who has been remarkable for his Amours, ' as well as his Valour and Conduct. It is that L-f-ck, who, if the Voice of Fame be true, was broke for his Wife's Imprudence and Jealoufy; because she, contrary to Orders, had shipped herself in Men's Clothes, aboard her Husband's Ship, to detect a suspected Intrigue: Though the poor Man, you fee, is quite disabled in his Limbs by the Gout, This Misfortune reduced them to the utmost Distress; and obliged him to put up with her Temper, and retire to a little Country-Village about ten Miles from London, to wait a Turn of Fortune, which foom happened in his Favour; though he was obliged, in the mean Time, to undergo a severe Discipline from his enraged Wife.—His House stood close to a bye Road, where Mr. L-f-ck made F 4 · Shift

t

8

W

104 The History of TOM JONES Book II. Shift to creep for the Benefit of the Sun. as he pretended: But, it being now Haymaking Seafon, it was observed he rather chose that Seat to pick up an Irish "Wench going or returning from the ad-* jacent Meadows. But, unlucky for him: When he had brought his Intentions to bear, his jealous Wife, receiving immediate Intelligence, surprised them together in a neighbouring Barn, and in such a Posture, that they were neither capable of running away, nor of defending themfelves from her Fury; which vented itself very liberally with a Ratan Cane upon them both, especially the poor Captain, whom fhe disciplined quite Home to his own House. And he tamely submitted to the Rod of Correction. Yet this is the Man that was entrufted with a fu- preme Command against our most powerful Enemies! But with what Honour and Courage he acquitted his Commisfion in the Mad-rran, it is for a Court-Martial, and not for such as us to pass our Judgment. He is now ordered upon another important Expedition: I hope

not against the French: For we seldom find that a needy Man, influenced by an ambitious, covetous Wife, has ever been able

to resist the Temptation of Louis d'Ors. Was

Was his Wife aboard To-day?' faid Mr. Allworthy. 'No, replied Lord B-n: But did not you observe him very fond of a certain Youth, that fat by him? That's a Woman, one of his Damsels in Man's Clothes, of whom they, his Friends, that endeavour to acquit him of taking a Bribe, say, she was the Cause of that fatal Disappointment to the Nation in the M-t-rr-n: For that young Creature being thrown into Fits by the Roaring of the Cannon, the Cries of the Wounded, &c. the Admiral, careless of Glory, or the Preservation of that Renown he had formerly acquired; forgetful of his Nation's Interest, intrusted in his Hands; forbid the Ships in his Divi-' fion to advance, lost the Opportunity of taking or burning most of the Enemy's · Ships, and suffered them to make off with the Reputation of Victory.

0

e

n

,

15

d

is

1-

r-

ir ft-

ſs

p-

pe

nd

)i-

le

as

Here Madam Constantia, craving Pardon, asked who that very handsome Commander was, to whom his Lordship introduced them at Dinner-time. That Commander, faid he, is what the Age calls a fortunate Man, amongst the Ladies: Of whom they tell a great many pleasant Stories;

F 5 I mean,

106 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

I mean, pleafant to the Ears of the Vicious; not that he is very delicate in his Amours, for the Girl you faw upon the Eminence on his right Hand, was lately "no better than a Fruiterer at the Playhouse. Did you mark what Profuseness in Eating; how his Table abounded in what was nice, as well as necessary; the extreme Delicateness of his own Taste, and the affected one of that Circle of Women, who were his Concubines: The Debauch of the Glass after Dinner; the · Variety of rich Wines, and heightening Cordials: the double Entendres of their · Conversation, which scarce preserved good Manners, and did Violence to the Modefly of your Sex. - And the obscene · Sports which succeeded, after we were gone, were an Accumulation of a riotous Life. Thus all dissolved in Luxury, this young Neptune provokes Death; wastes the ebbing Sand, and shakes the hafty Hour-glass, while he is in Danger, every Hour, of being fummoned to · launch into the Deep of Eternity; neither taught to reflect by Tempests or ' Thunder, by Cannon or Destruction, to · prepare for that dreadful Alteration, that 4 Antipathy to Nature, the Antithesis of Life, which that Mortal ought, every · Hour,

' Hour, to be apprehensive of.' Ah my Lord, faid Mr. Allworthy, I wonder that the Waves do not immediately fwallow them alive! or that God does not give them up to their Enemies to be perpetually vanquished. What Hope can a Nation have of Success, when their Power is trusted in such wicked Hands? 'It was a very ungrateful Observation: But I could not help being a Witness, 'That, among the ten-thousand Mariners we passed through To-day, I never heard the Name of God invoked, but to blaf-' pheme it, and to witness their Millions of Falshoods and Vanities. You did not ' see one in the whole Fleet rise from Table to improve their Conversation and Time by reading meritorious Authors, the Sciences, even their own Mathematics; or in any Entertainment that could better their Lives, Philosophy, and Humanity, to fosten the Rigidness of a ftern, cruel Education, or to enable them to bear the Fatigues and Dangers of their Employment: But the Glass was put brifkly about to make them noify, vainglorious, boafting, severe, unmerciful: And I could fee others withdrawing to 4 risk their Fortune at Dice and Cards.'

121111

durit not thermur, for Fear of that Diffi-These Observations were too just to be in any Measure excused But Captain Nourler, who was come aftere with my Lord, and had ferved in the Royal Navy in all Queen Anne's War, begged Leave to obferve, That our Fleets now are under a much better Regulation; and though they wear away their Lives in a detestable Round of Viciousness, they are not so bad as the Officers of old, who omitted no Opportunity to defraud the Seamen of their Subfistance, by adulterating their Provisions, both Meat, Drinks and Pulse; by which their Strength was enervated, and a thousand other Inconveniencies were entailed upon the Nation in general, as well as on the Men that were the immediate Sufferers. Then they were eminent in nothing more, than for the Art of defrauding them of the sweet Enjoyment and Fruit of their Labour. When thro' the undaunted Courage of the Mariners, their Contempt of Death, and warrantable Defire to better their wretched Condition of Life, they attacked a rich Prize, and took it, though all ought to have an equal Share in what they have equally purchased, at the Expence of their Lives, the Commanders appropriated the Benefit, as well as the Glory: And the poor Wretches durft

durst not murmur, for Fear of that Discipline, which was first designed and termed Martial pour is since degenerated, as the wild Fancy of a cruel Man in Power shall suggesty and layer and man in Power shall suggesty and layer and man in Power shall suggesty and layer and lay

Mr. Jones, who had all this Time given great Attention to what had been faid and done made bold to break Silence, and asked if there could be found no Remedy to all those Evils, which had taken to deep Root in the Navy! To which Capt. Naucler replied, If fome great good Man · should stand up and vigorously attack these Disorders, as it is hoped there is one fuch a one at their Head: If Corruptions were not above, these Inconveniencies would not be below: Did only Service and true Merit recommend to Office: Were not Bribery and the Sollicitations of Friends preferred to Duty and Worth: Were fevere Penalties inflicted upon those · Blasphemers, the Commanders themselves first desisting from the Use: Were Dice, ' Cards, and an exorbitant Love of Wine, and the hotter Liquors taxed fo high as to put them out of the Power of the lower Classes: Were faithful Commissioners appointed to inspect the Provision of the Navy: Were Matter of lawful

· Com-

110 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

. Complaint made free to the meanest Sea-

man, provided (upon Pain of exemplary

' Punishment) he advance nothing but the

Truth of Were it made capital to take

a Bribe in the Service of their Country;

the Regulation might be made easy; provided the leading Men and Com-

manders would give them Examples of

Sobriety, Justice, and Morality: But all

is nothing but Oaths, Drunkenness, burn-

ing Luft, Riots, Avarice, Cruelty, and

Disorder. They have got the better of

s a bad Reputation, and do not so much

5 as care to diffemble a good one: Nay,

the very meanest of the Crew are so train-

ed up in hardened Folly, that there is

not a Wretch amongst them, though for

three Years he has gone tattered and al-

· most naked, not knowing the Use or

Benefit of Money, but, when he receives

' his Pay, shall never stir from the White-

· Hart, with a Gang of dissolute Flatter-

ers and lewd Women about him, till he

of the bredt aborded them bears the ene.

and the the first Out of weak a blight

taw-count Partno ambied own and Cancorae

who icented actuards to have the benefican

has spent the last Penny. nodurand to make

Lanni

Well and they reduced in the CaH A.P.

tr

·ly

fr

A

ol

W

ft

li

fr

la

S

u

OI

ra

Complaint made free to the meanert School

Punishment) he advance nothing but the

Astrange Adventure between Portsmouth and winner Salisbury? and in which is with the salisbury?

NIEXT Morning the Company fet out early, intending to lodge that Night at Salisbury. Every Thing conspired to make their Journey delightful; the Country was gay, the Company was joyous; only Madam Constantia could not entirely smother the Uneasiness of her Mind in the Affair above related, though it was carried off with Pretence of too great a Fatigue, which affected her Head: When about three o'Clock they were all alarmed with fudden Shrieks and Cries that came from a little House, at the End of a small Village. At their Approach, they found the Door open, and a confiderable Crowd, for fo fmall a Country Town, about it. The Alarum at first threw the Ladies into some Sort of Confusion; but as they came closer up, the Sight afforded them much Diversi-For the first Object was an old thin raw-boned Parson, in his Gown and Cassock, deeply engaged in Combat with his Wife, who feemed not only to have the better of him. The History of Tom Jones Book II. thim, but to be the Aggressor also. The Figure he made was very grotefque; his Band was tore off on one Side, his Hat and Peruke were loft in the Scuffle, and his Face was to before ared with fomething, that it was not possible to know he was a human Creature, otherwife than by his Voice, which was very clamorous; for his Wife had thrown a piping-hot Apple-pye at him, which scalded him in a very handsome Manner, and then a Pound of Butter to cool him again; which fo exasperated his canonical Spirit, raised by the Smart of the Burning, that he catched hold of her Topknot, resolved to demolish that Fabric, in which he had observed she had placed always a great Deal of Pride; but it was fattened fo close to her Head, that he pulled and tugged in vain, while the fhricked as loud as ever the could; and well the might, for he had torn a Piece of her Ear from her Head, which made the Blood run down, and was easier to come off than the Headgeer, which was fo interwove with Pins, Top-knots, false and true Curls, that it flood impenetrable; and the Crowd, who delighted to see her drubbed, never attempted to part them. But, at the Request of the Ladies, the Servants were ordered to guard only alliques are encounter-

I

fo

3H

th

p

W

II

te

-0

W

•

T

t

f

e

1

1

2

1

Chogo in bis MARRIED STATES 112 interpose; and the Wife, finding herself at Liberty, flounced out of the House, called for her Coachman, and bid him put in the Horses, for she would go immediately, in that very bloody Condition, and her Headpiece difordered, to fue for Justice, if there were any Justice to be had in the Nation. The poor Fellow, though he loved his Mafter ten Times better, durst not disobey her Commands. However, the was no fooner withdrawn, than, upon Enquiry into the Cause of such an imprudent Behaviour, and the good old Gentleman had got his Face washed, he, recollecting Mr. Allworthy's Face, preffed him very much to ftop and refresh himself and Friends, and promised to give them a fair Account thereof. 'You fee, faid he, that I am matched to the She-devil incarnate; you fee what she is for Person, my good Friends, nothing was ever fo homely; her Face is made in Part like a Black-a-moor, flat-nofed, blubberlipped; there is no Sign of Life in her Complexion, it favours all of Mortality, and yet the Devil was in me, I married for Love. Lord blefs us! Love of what? I am fure it could never be with her good Conditions; but I will tell you the naked Truth: My Parents and all my furviving Relations were Papists, who brought me up

The History of Tom Ton Es Book II up in the strictest Manner under a Priest. who kept a Boarding School at a Place called Newton of the Withes, about three Miles South of the River Tees in Yorkshire, and from thence transported me to the English College at Doway; where being entered very young, not much turned of eleven Years of Age, I continued till Maturity of Judgment and God's Grace discovered the Errors of my Education, and guided me into the Way of Truth. I had been doubtful for at least three whole Years, and after I had in vain fought, all that Time, for Relief to my Scruples in Religion from my Teachers, I resolved to try what Knowledge I could obtain from England in the Points controverted with the Church of Rome. I was fincerely definous to defend the Religion in which I had been educated, -and determined to take up no Doctrines upon Trust, nor maintain any for Divine, which rested merely upon human Authority. I communicated my Objections in Writing to my Father, which indeed were the common Reasons urged by the Church of England, for her Separating from the Church of Rome; acquainting him that, as I was intended for a Missionary amongst Protestants it was necessary I should be instructed to confute those Objections made to my Mission. That

my

Sa

ha

C

P

L

re

m

ga

fre

he 3

fu

Pr

an

ac

fec

ve his

ret fen

ine

the

he

his

fee

mi

ftr

mo bet Ch. 5. in bis MARRIED STATE, 115

my Teachers were fo far from giving me Satisfaction in this Particular, That they had refolved all into the Authority of the Church, which could be no Argument with Protestants who deny that Authority. That I had been feverely treated, and called Heretic, because I insisted upon better Arguments than the Authority they proposed against the Reasonings of the Protestants from the Scriptures, and therefore praved he would lay them before the learned Priefts, &c. of his Communion, that I might be furnished with more folid Replies to the Protestant Disputants. This my Sincerity. and Unbosoming myself to my Parent, had a quite contrary Effect. My Father inclofed my Scruples and Objections under Cover to the President of the College, with his special Command, to use me as my heretical Principles should require. I was prefently informed of this treacherous Proceeding, which I cannot attribute to my Father's Disposition, than whom none could be more humane; but to the Principles of his Education, which facrificeth natural Affection, as well as every other Duty, to the mistaken Zeal of faving a Soul by the Destruction of the Body. But Grace did much more abound; for, when I found myfelf betrayed, and delivered up in this merciless

0

n

ir

IS

te

at

y

116 The History of Tom Jon Es Book H. lefs Manner, my Soul was eafed of the Burthen of its former Scruples about the Points in Dispute. The Silence and Terrors of those, who, if they could, ought to have instructed me in the Defence of their religious Principles, convinced me, that I had been educated in a wrong Way; and as if the Veil of Error was just then rent from me, and the Shield of Faith were that Moment buckled upon me, I saw, I embraced, and I resolved in my Heart to defend the Truth of the Gospel, from that very Moment, against all the Attacks of Prejudice, and the Bulwarks of Sophistry.—It would take up too much Time to tell you how I escaped the Inquisition, and its cruel Torments. But it was necessary to inform you of the Premisses; because they in some Measure account for my being hurried into a Match with this She-bear, which I afterwards picked up in the northern Mountains, where I had fled for Shelter from my Persecutors .- I got clear off, and safe to my native Soil; and, trusting to the Liberty and Laws of an Englishman, being now about Twenty-two, I was not afraid to make the best of my Way to my Father's House, who I knew could accuse me of nothing in my moral Character, nor in my Diligence at my Study. I need not represent the Aftonish-

N

re

fo

ol

0

h

h

W

901

Ch. 5. in bis Married State. 117 ftonishment he was in to fee the there. The News of my Elopement had not as yet reached his Ears. He was joyed, He was forrowful. Nature threw him into Excess of Raptures to fee a Son, His First-born, His own Image, fo like in Size and Make to himself, absent from a Child, start upon him a Man at once ; which parental Fire was, however, foon extinguished by the raging Tempest of his religious Zeal. Oh! I cannot forget the Convultions of his Soul. -He cried for Joy, he foamed with Rage, -He was glad to embrace me, -and in a Moment threatened me with Curses, Imprecations, Death, and Damnation, if I would not return immediately to my own or some other College, and complete my Studies for the English Mission. In fine, he grew fo outrageous, that I concluded my Safety could not be affured under his Roof. -I embraced him tenderly,-I excused myfelf with the greatest Submission; -I protested my Sincerity,-modestly rebuked his betraying me to an Inquisition,-and declared that I was still open to Conviction,and that I must embrace the Truth whereever I found it .- After this, I withdrew to a Sea-Port Town, about twelve Miles off, and there ignorant of the World, an entire Stranger both to the People and their Customs.

0

0

r-

W

ce

e,

in

ce

1

h-

118 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

Customs, and as one in Despair how to proceed in a Way of Life, who had never before been obliged to provide for myfelf, nor brought up to any Thing but Learning, and even that in a Way quite different from the Education of the Country I was now arrived in; I wandered about as one forlorn for a short Time. Yet I supported the Credit of a fober young Gentleman, which gained me the Countenance of the Neighbourhood where I lodged, amongst whom the Mother of this outrageous Quean, having two Daughters, and nothing to give them, invited me to spend my leifure Hours, as she termed them, in her Family.—The Young and Unexperienced are foon overreached, especially where the Design is baited with the Professions of Esteem and Friendship, Besides, I was now not only cast out and forsaken, but also persecuted privately by my Relations.—A Relaxation of Thought,—a Sympathizing in Afflictions, -and the humourous Conversation amongst young People prevailed upon me to be very constant with the Girls.—They had no Call to expose their Tempers to a Visiter.—A Woman always wheedles a Man's Love by a foft Look, eafy Behaviour, and obliging Conversation, which is almost natural to her Sex, when she has a Design

ON the Core to fu for St of

m wa m H

fh

We Fe D tel

in ftr

nu I Defign upon him. Thus I was trapped. Nothing could appear more good-natured than Xantippe, for fo I shall call my Wife, henceforward; always commiferating my Condition, always wondering how any Parent could yield fo much to Superstition, as to banish such a Child from his Presence, for submitting to the Dictates of a good Conscience; besides, perceiving I was a mere Student, always confined to the Drudgery of the Schools, and a Lover of Retirement, the availed herself of these also, to sooth my Inclinations. She contrived to be always present with me at her Mother's, and would frequently make an Excuse to call at my Lodgings in a Morning to enquire my Health; if the found me disconsolate, the would fing a Scotch Song of Jockey and Jenny, or Catharine Ogy; and sometimes a Ditty of her own composing, for she pretended to be a Wit, and feldom or ever could be feen without a Book, which she improved, as the understood it was the strongest Instrument to work upon my Affections. She displayed her Talent in Verses of Atoms, Artic, and Antartic, of Gods, &c. I first was enamoured with her Ingenuity, and by that Means losing my Guard, I foon was decoyed into a Marriage. tippe, 120 The History of TOM JONES Book II.

tippe, knowing from my own Mouth how much I admired her Understanding, but, finding no Advances towards a married State, tried if the could not gain my Compassion also; which was artfully managed. Her Head was full of Invention, All of a fudden I could perceive a great Partiality of Xantippe's Mother towards her Sifter Alicia, which was the Name of the younger Daughter; a Matter agreed on between themselves, and improved by the subtle Xantippe to my Ruin, who from thenceforward made this an Excuse to visit me frequently at my Lodgings, where she complained heavily of her Ill-treatment at Home; that she had always led a Dog's Life; had once been obliged to shun the Impertinences of her Sifter, and the Loquaciousness of her Mother, by an Elopement to a near Relation's in London; that the would go any where, undergo any Fortune, and-could find in her Heart to take up with the first Man that should ask her the Question, so he was but a Scholar, and a fober Man, rather than live under so much Uneafiness at Home; which last Words were dropped with fuch a Softness, balanced with a deep Sigh, and directed with the Index of a most amorous Cast of her Eye next

n

P

th

N

th

ed

B

lei

sh.

Ch. 5. in bis MARRIED STATE. 121 next to me, that I was Fool enough to wipe up her Tears, which followed in great Profusion, with the welcome Protestation. that I would do all in my Power to release her out of that Bondage; and that if the could like my Person, and be content to share my Fortune, which at that Time bore no advantageous Aspect, I would be married as foon as the pleased.—The Gypfy took me at my Word, for though she had Art enough to blame her own Forwardness that prompted me to this Declaration, and Proposal of Marriage, yet she cast it entirely upon her Mother's unnatural Behaviour, who had, as she pretended, driven her to betray the Weakness of her Sex in this Particular. Yet, faid she, Mr. Thompson, I must confess there is no Man in the World I love like you. I am not ashamed to tell you that I was smitten with the Love of your Person, the Moment I saw you first; and this fecret pervading Love, that enters the Heart, and circulates with the Blood in a Manner, that cannot be accounted for by the greatest Philosophers, has daily increased by your learned and fober Education.-But Mr. Thompson, before I give my Conient, I will discharge my Conscience, it shall never be said that I deceived you with the

t

S

e

)-

2-

at

r-

ce

er

nd

ch

ds

n-

he

ye

xt

122 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

the Expectation of a large Fortune; I would rather chuse to pine away a sorrowful Life for the Loss of you, than be the Cause of increasing your Afflictions. I tell you then, I have nothing to depend upon but my Needle: However, I am well descended, my Great Grandfather, by my Mother's Side, was a Major in King Charles I's Army; and I should have received a handsome Fortune. all at your Disposal, had not my Mother's Father married a second Wife, fold his Estate for an Annuity, and left what little he had gathered up so enthralled, that his Children could recover little more of it from their Mother-in-Law, than paid their Charges in the Court of Chancery. Thus you fee, Mr. Thompson, I am come of a good Family; I have had good Education for a Woman in my Circumstances; Ican stoop to put my Hand to any Thing, when joined to the Man I love; and I doubt not but our joint Endeavours (if you can but raise a School, and I employ my Needle) will provide us a comfortable, if not an affluent Living. This frank Discourse, suiting best with my undifguised Principles of Honour and Gratitude, threw me into such an Extafy of Joy, that, forgetful of all Consequences, or of the Means how to pro-

Ch. 5. in bis MARRIED STATE. vide for a Wife and Family, I immediately catched her in my Arms; told her I would make her happy, as far as in my Power, and refused to release her, till I had, as it were, extorted her Confent, and made her feal our mutual Engagement of Marriage with a Kiss. As soon as we had acquainted her Mother with our Refolutions, I could perceive a greater Calm at Home, though I did not then directly enter into the Meaning of it: We were married in a few Days after. I fold some little Houses left to me by my Grandfather, for our prefent Support. And finding that my new Mother drew me in, under the Notion of providing for my Wife, to keep House for her Family; and my Father also threatening me with Destruction, when he heard I was married, which baffled his Scheme of returning me to College; I gained my Wife's Confent to try our Fortune, in or about London: where we lived, tho' not without some Tokens of a wicked Spirit for some Time, in a very parsimonious low Condition, till by Application, and my prudent Behaviour, I raised a good School: But as the Profits of my Labours increased: so Xantippe shewed her Spirit more and more, and my Sorrows began in good Earnest to weigh me down. Pride, G ? Envy,

124 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

Envy, and Jealoufy presently appeared deeply rooted in her Heart. I doated on her, and as Money came in, laid it out upon her and her Defires with a lavish Hand; I even accounted for and gave her every Penny I received to expend at her Difcretion: Till at last I could observe, she grudged me the smallest and most necessary Expences for my Pocket; suspected always that I reserved a private Purse to myself for evil Purposes; and if she saw any of her Neighbours better dreffed, &c. than herfelf, there was no bearing her Impertinencies, till Provision could be made to equal, if not excel the richest of her new Acquaintance. And she at last looked upon me to be so much her Property, that she would accuse me of breaking my Marriage Contract, if I did but stir over the Door, or fpeak to a Stranger, though it were upon Business, without her at my Elbow; and banish me from the Houses of my best Friends, who at last were afraid to invite me, left she should reproach them with criminal Familiarities with her Husband; though she could never fix any Harm upon me, after many Attempts to do it, and she had borne me three Children .- This unbappy Dilemma, either of living for ever unealy at Home, which is most uncomfortable,

Ch. 5. in his MARRIED STATE. or of disobliging my Friends, brought me into a very bad State of Health. Till then I had never properly known what Grief was. It now feized my Mind powerfully .- I reafoned with her, - I remonstrated, and I even picked up Courage to threaten her with Marks of my Difpleafure, should she continue to be fo exalted, and fo imprudent and mischievous :- But I could work nothing upon her imperious Heart. She would deny what fhe could not defend, and wherein the was convicted of Misconduct, she endeavoured to justify it by Impudence, and a Commendation of her own Supposed Virtues .- But that good God, who had protected and bleffed me in my Endeavours hitherto, interposed, with his providential Care, to deliver me out of all my Fears, concerning the Decay of my School, which, by my ill State of Health, and my Wife's abusive Tongue to my Friends, grew very visible; and fent me an unknown Benefactor, who upon a fair Remonstrance of my Character and Misfortunes, procured me a Title for Orders, and most generously gave me this Living. Xantippe, though she was brazen enough to be scurrilous to the Objects of her causeless Hatred, was greatly enraged, and her Pride extremely mortified, to find her House was no

126 The History of TOM JONES Book II. no longer frequented by the neighbouring Gentlewomen, and that every Body shunned her Company; fo that, upon the first News of this Removal, she became mighty good-natured, could not contain her Joy at the Prospect of getting out of the Contempt she had raifed against herself, and condescended to promise she would live with me in better Terms for the Future. But as the was observed before to grow worse, as my Condition grew better; so as this Living enabled and required me, for the Good of my Parishioners, to enter into a higher Way of Life, the forgot all her Promifes, provided they had been fincere; and does not only expose herself by quarrelling with all the Women of the Parish, and Gentry in the Neighbourhood, but she will not venture to Church above thrice a Year, because the Rubric does not oblige her to it, though, in Fact, it is, because she cannot bear to fee my Lady Rebsif, my Lady Eivligo, my Lady Sinned, and two or three more Gentlewomen of Fashion, who have been fo kind as to favour her with many Prefents for herfelf and Children, and are fo obliging to tell her they admire her Hufband's Preaching: Not to mention the Antipathy she has taken at the poor Sexton's Daughter, for helping me on fometimes

with

Ch. 5. in bis MARRIED STATE. 127 with my Surplice. And, when she comes, the whole Congregation is fure of being disturbed by her counterfeit Fits; and after a powerful Effusion of cold Water and Hartshorn, she is carried Home in a languishing Posture. At Home her Tongue is a perpetual War; her Discourse one continued Reproach, founding the Praise of her own Abilities, her own Family, and her own Goodness, and derogating from mine and my Children's Honour, whom she does not scruple to stigmatize with the Character of black Guards, though she bare them herfelf; and when my only Daughter was not full Fifteen, would have perfuaded me, that the modest Child was certainly a Whore. She has accused me of five-hundred Whoredoms; a Lady of Seventy-five, and the Sexton's Wife, that had been bed-rid twelve Years, could not escape her Imputations of being naught with me; I can never go into a Lying-in-Chamber, though it be in the Presence of the Father and Gossips, but I am suspected. I happened one Day only to fay, that my Lady Rehsif was the fairest Woman I ever faw, and she immediately not only turned all the Favours she and her Family had received from her Ladyship into Ridicule, but took the first Opportunity to affront her, and has not scrupled to

128 The History of Tom Jones Book II. bribe her Maid, as she has since confessed, to swear she had seen me have carnal Converfation with that innocent Creature; and notwithstanding she knows herfelf detected in this Affair, has the Impudence and the highest Imprudence (because it tends to my Destruction, which must end in her own) to call her Whore, and to justify what her Maid denied upon Oath. But what is worfe, there is no Way to reform her. She is the most deceitful Creature living. She will pretend a Reconciliation, only to recruit her Malice. It is not a Week ago, fince I forgave her all that was past, and invited Friends to be Witnesses of our Reconciliation, and, as I hoped, to check her future Imprudences. And to convince her, as I thought, the more of my Sincerity and Love revived, I early that Morning took Horse with my Man-Servant to Salisbury-Market, that I might provide for them in the most elegant Manner: But she, with her wonted Rhetoric, entertained the Gentlewomen her Guests with a contrived Narration of my Perfidy: - ' Ladies, faid she (as they have all told me fince) I thank you for this kind Appearance on what you call an happy Occasion, and indeed it would have been happy; but we Women are the · most unhappy of all Creatures, - Man is

Ch. 5. in bis MARRIED STATE. 129 · ever deceiving us with Appearances. My Hufband, that wicked Man, carries a donble Face. He would by his Feast To-day perfudde you, that he is inhocent of his adulterous Amour with Lady Rebsif, but he cannot deceive me; I know him better, I have not lived with him almost " twenty Years, but I must be allowed to know his crafty Tricks. I am always ' fure, when he comes Home with a pleafing Smile in his Countenance, that he is come from one of his Whores.—And I am as fure, that when he takes upon himfelf the Office of a Caterer, he provides at the fame Time for his favourite Miftress. But I have discovered, this Morning, what gives me more Difgust than all 4 this: He went to Salisbury with a Pretence to oblige me, and has carried that ' nasty Carrion of a Whore along with him. —Who would be married to fuch a Man.! Who could bear fuch Works under their very Nose! What a miserable Wretch am I reduced to, from that plentiful Fortune, to which I was born: And that 'Rogue has run it out, and now am forced to live upon Bread, that he has begged of that old leacherous Squire Boniface? Oh how I am reduced! Oh how " shall I live when he is dead! He has spent

130 The History of TOM JONES Book H.

my ALL in Debauchery. It will break my very Heart to petition the Sons of the Clergy.'-The good Women were not a little shaken in their good Opinion of me, hearing this politive Invective with an Air of the greatest Assurance and real Sorrow. But Madam Lockrub, who had experienced much in Life, and of Years not eafy to be inflamed with the Fire of Jealoufy, who also was better acquainted with my Conduct and the reproachful Tongue of Xantippe, who was called down upon some Occasion, desired they would suspend their Belief, till she had an Opportunity to afk me the Question, being thoroughly convinced that I would declare the naked Truth. I was never more furprized than at this Report. I produced my Man to undeceive the Ladies, and at their Request I behaved with all the outward Good-nature towards my malicious Confort, as I was Master of. But they will never more come near her Dwelling. And, indeed, had it not been through Request, and in Complaisance to the Company, I have found it always my best Method, to get clear of her Abuse, to keep myself calm. When she has had her Revenge, she is at Ease. But if perchance she surprizes my Mind unguarded against the bitter Assaults of her Tongue,

Ch. 5. in bis MARRIED STATE. 131 and can wind me up into a Passion, as it is not in the Power of Man always to forbear; then she is pleased, then she is delighted, triumphs, and finds her Joy in my Tor-ments.—The Temper of the Devil! which always is fure to exert its Faculties on the Day before I am to communicate; then she never fails to perplex me all Night long, on Purpose to discompose and put my Mind out of Frame. I have often, on such Occasions, attempted to lie in another Bed; but that will not do: I should lie too much at my Ease, and that would be her Hell. am no fooner laid down, than up she comes roaring, and stamps her Foot without ceafing, as hard as she is able, at the Chamber-Door, till it is broke open; she is as strong in her Freaks as a Grenadier; then she falls a howling and fobbing; tells me she cannot fleep without me, and either forces me to rise to her Bed, or comes to Bed to me, and is fure to keep me awake all Night long with her Scolding; and as that is all her End and Defign, when she puts on that Defire of my Company, there is no Interval, no Truce to be had with her. I have fometimes refolutely left the House, and laid in the Fields all Night, to avoid her perplexing Tongue; but then she vents her suggot to le min G 6 Spleen

n

0

I

d

it

r

e

it

132 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

Spleen upon my poor Children, and terrifies them in fuch a Manner, that I am afraid they will be driven from Home. 19 If it was not for their Sakes, to bring them and to provide for them, bwould have forfaken all, and banished myfelf to fome diftant Nation to feek my Bread, rather than undergo the Vexation of this Xanrippe. She had lately almost choaked this my Daughter, a Woman grown, by flying upon her with her two Hands about her Throat: She stopped her Wind-pipe, till the poor Girl's Tongue hung out of her Mouth, and her Face was grown black, and had certainly killed her instantly, had not the Cook-maid run into the Parlour and prevented her; and for no other Reafon, but because the Child bid her take Care not to tread on her Gown, because, the Hoop being off, it was drawing on the Ground; which the fagacious Mother interpreted, That her Daughter would thereby infinuate file was Drunk. Nay, it is not the first Time she has taken up a Poker at me, at the same Time crying out, Murder, Murder ; and when I have laid Hold of her Hands to prevent Mischief, she has next Day taken the Opportunity of my Abfence to vifit every old Woman in the ship Achien ; to envy whatever pat

Chigod mbio Markien State. 1 422 Neighbourhood to inform them of my chiel Ulage of her, that the lives in Danger of her Life from my Hands and having remakable Flesh for Bruising the backs her idle Stories with black and blue Spots in her Arms, Degs, and Thighs, made by herfelf, which she pretends I have given her with Blows and Pinching But I think I have most Reason to be afraid of my Life from fuch a Fury : Nav. I have even caught her feeling about my Wind-pipe, fo as to startle me our of my Sleep. And yet I know not how to remedy my fad Misfortune. - I have offered to give her all I have in the World, if the will but go from me; yet though she is fordidly covetous, she will not accept my Proposal; because her master Passion is to torment some Body, which she cannot exercise so effectually to her Pleafure, on any Person, as upon me. - Then for her Morals, if you can spare Time to hear them; you must know, she values herfelf chiefly on her Capacity to difcover Seerets, that never existed; to find out Imputations, that were never deferved; and to revenge Affronts, that were never given; to betray private Conversation; to fow Discord amongst Friends; to prevent, as far as lies in her Power, every good and charitable Action; to envy whatever paffeth.

134 The History of Tom Jones Book II. feth by herfelf, and to requite friendly Advice with the most outrageous and unjust Returns .- A particular Acquaintance, one that has been our very good Friend, and the principal Infrument of my getting this Living, did only affume the reasonable Freedom to advise her against Passion and Anger; fhe took it fo ill at her Hands, that, to be revenged, she made herfelf a voluntary Evidence in a Law-fuit against her, of all the Discourse they had had together in Freedom, and by adding a great Deal of False to the True, made her lose her Cause. What then is fuch a Woman not capable of doing?—She rogues her Husband,—abuses her Children, and betrays her Friends. -But to come to the Occasion of our prefent Broil: - I had been Abroad To-day about my proper Bufiness, and had missed my Dinner, chusing rather to dine at Home with my Family, than to accept the Invitation of a Parishioner. When I found that the Family had dined (for though the has the Knack of pleading Loss of Appetite, and a small Stomach, in my Presence, and with Company; she can eat as coarse, strong, and as much Victuals as any Ploughman, when alone). I asked for something to eat, but found my Wife had taken Care to clear the Cupboard, that there should be nothing letin

Chi 5.1 in bis MARRIED STATE 135 left for me, till one of the Maids whifpered me, that there was a large Apple-pye in the Oven to be kept hat for one of her Cronies at Supper, without my Knowledge. And as my Stomach was very tharp fet, and my Heart full of Refentment, to find I was so ill used on all Occasions, I attacked the Oven, as by Instinct; drew out the Pye with my own Hands, and was already buttering it, when Xantippe, alarmed with its Smell into her Closet, where she had retired to congratulate herfelf upon the Expectation of my having no Dinner, came running with the greatest Fury, and with a dexterous Whirl of her Hand, sends it full in my Face and Eyes; which she seconded with the Plate of Butter, then with the Tankard full of Drink, and with every Thing the could pick up on the Table; the Pain of which deprived me of my usual Moderation, and forced me to unman myfelf so much, as to lift up my Hand against her Sex. I leaped briskly at her Topknot; she squalled, she alarmed the Neighbours, and yourfelves, I suppose, to behold this comical Combat. It was Nuts to those Rogues my Neighbours, who would not have parted us, though we had killed ourselves upon the Spot; they have often heard her scream out Murder, when no Body has been 101

126 The History of Tom Jones Book II. been in the Room with her, fo that they were glad to fee her in a fair Way of being ferioufly fagged. But for you Gentlemen and Ladies, I am much obliged for your Endeavours, though I can fee but small Hopes of redressing these Grievances, that lie heavy upon me. Were I of another Profession than I am, I would, by a just Indignation, affert the Authority of a Hufband; but our Talent is expected to be meek under Persecution, and Long-suffering; which not only biasses the World against any Resistance made by a Clergyman, when ill used; but entails upon the Cloth everlafting Discontent in a married State: whose Wives, presuming that their ecclesiaftic Husbands are restrained, by their Character, from taking the proper Methods, which are in the Power of the Laity, without Clamour, to curb a female Companion's Usurpations, and virulent Temper, too often, not only contend for an absolute Controul and despotic Power over their Husbands and their Families, but are not content without endeavouring to gain to themselves the Reputation of good Managers, frugal, virtuous Wives, and tender Mothers, at the Expence of propagating the undeserved Idleness, Profuseness, and Viciousness of their Husbands, and Disobedience

cood

of as ge

an co M ri

Ju ar ot ar

he fo

to I-

J

v

of

in bis MARRIED STATE. of their most dutiful Children. Wherefore, as particular Scandal often reflects upon the general, and as my Brethren may be afperfed for my Sake; fo I, - like many more, am content to fit down under this Chastifement, rather than have it faid, I do act contrary to my Preaching.' - The good old Man was going on, when a Meffenger arrived to acquaint him, that his Wife stepping in a great Fury out of the Coach, at Justice Horsenail's Door, her Foot slipped, and broke her Leg short by the Ankle, and otherwise bruised her in a terrible Manner. and that she insisted to give her Oath, that her Husband was the Cause of it; and therefore, to prevent any further Confusion in the Family, he was defirous to hafte away, and endeavour to appeale her, and submit to fuch Reconciliation as the Justice was in Hopes to make, while a Surgeon could arrive from Salifbury, to fet her Leg, &c.

Mr. Allworthy immediately backed the Justice's Advice, and earnestly intreated the injured Husband to put up, for this Time, with the Infirmities of his Wife, who, he said, would certainly mend her Manners, after so severe a Chastisement of her own Fury Mend ber Manners! the Parson

Parfon replied with a kind of Disdain: No, Sir, she is no Changeling,

Her Manners will not let ber Larum cease, Who thinks you are unhappy, when at Peace; And let the guilty Wife her Guilt confess By tame Behaviour, and a soft Address.

I am determined never more to truckle to her Taw; I have gone too far to retreat. If I give up the Field of Battle, I must yield the Victory to the Enemy. I value her not; -- she may do her Worst with the Justice, and I expect no Amendment, nor Submission. You know her not so well as I do. This has often been the Trade. She never makes any Advances to a Reconciliation,-works upon my Good-nature, by the Interpolition of some weak deceived Friend; and when she has brought me to her Bent, then she cries up her own Virtue, Innocence, ill Usage from me, Humanity to her Family, her Wit, her Pedigree, her unblemished Honour, and grows so captious, that neither I nor my Children dare fpeak or look in her Presence, for Fear of blowing up the old Embers into a new Flame, and property and a

Arrive March

Through

K

B

I

n

P

Through Virtue she refuses to comply With all the Distates of Humanity;
Through Wisdom she refuses to submit
Through Wisdom's Rules, and raves to prove her
Wit:

Then, her unblemish'd Honour to maintain, Rejects her Husband's Kindness with Disdain. But, if by Chance an ill-adapted Word Drops from the Lip of her unwary Lord, Her darling China, in a Whirlwind sent, fust intimates the Lady's Discontent. Wine may indeed excite the meekest Dame, But keen Xantippe, scorning borrow'd Flame, Can vent her Thunders, and her Lightnings play,

O'er cooling Gruel, and composing Tea:
Nor rests by Night, but more sincere than nice,
She shakes the Gurtains with her kind Advice
Doubly like Eccho, Sound is her Delight,
And the last Word is her eternal Right.
Is't not enough Plagues, Wars, and Famines
rise

To lash our Crimes?—But must our Wives be wise?

Many Arguments were made Use of by my Lord B—n and the rest of the Company to appease the old Gentleman; but he remained determined to try how far his Con-

140 The History of Tom Jones Book II. Contempt of his Wife's Proceedings would carry her, and to guard with Prudence against her Machinations; as the best and furest Method to bring her to a true Knowledge of herfelf and of her Duty to her Husband; and consequently to secure to himfelf and Family a more peaceable Life for the Future. So that the Ladies having drank Tea, and the Gentlemen refreshed themselves with a Bottle of the Doctor's October, to which he had invited them, as foon as his Wife was out of Sight, they lest him to pursue his own Measures, and proceeded towards Salisbury. r kents thought are disasteed alket

CHAP. VI.

rauna accionis virmais nos

6

· t

6]

• 1

1

6 I

· 1

· r

. 7

• 1

· r

. (

t

. (

· F

Profitable Reflections taken from the Discontent of married People.

Aving got quite out of Hearing, and the Observation of the Parson and his Neighbours, Mr. Allworthy began to apply this late Adventure for the Instruction of his young Relations:—' See here, Ne' phew Jones, says he, what a sad Discou' ragement have we met with, against a married State! That an old married Couple; the Parents of several Children, who are the Offspring of their mutual Em' braces:

Ch. 6. in bis MARRIED STATE, 141 braces; and, what is more aftonishing. the Rector of a Parish, the Teacher of a numerous Flock, to live in this Discord, and open Breach of the Peace, is, to be fure, very furprizing, very disheartening. But we are not to judge by Appearances; nor to condemn any State of Life of Unhappiness and Misery; because some that are in it, make it fo .- I will therefore defire your Attention to a few Observations; which, well purfued, may prevent the ' like Misfortune in other Families. You ' feem to be furprized, that a Couple who ' have lived together Twenty or Five and 'Twenty Years should ever disagree. But ' take my Word for it, and they that live ' long enough may find it true; there is fo ' much Nicety and Difcretion requisite to ' keep Love alive after Marriage, and to ' make Conversation still new and agreeable, after Twenty or Five and Twenty ' Years, that I know nothing which feems ready to promise it, but an earnest Endea-' vour on both Sides to please; and on the 'Man's Part, superior good Sense. In a ' married State it is very proper each of the Couple should frequently remember, that

there are many Things, which grow out of their very Natures, that are pardonable. Wisdom seems absolutely necessary;

142 The History of Tom Jones Book II. the best Husbands have been most famous for their Discretion, and you have just been Witness to the Unhappiness, which attends the Want of it. This teacheth the Husband fo to fosten the Authority by his Kindness, as to give his Spouse Ease, without abridging her Liberty. Wisdom must be supported by Virtue ' and Good-nature, without which a mar-· ried State will always be troubled with the · boitterous and confuming Waves of Jea-· loufy and Discord: Again, the Woman, who would not fail to make herfelf always amiable to her Husband, must place her most engaging Charms, not in a fine · Face, or Riches, or in Nobleness of Birth, but in an inviolable Fidelity, good Hu-' mour, and Evenness of Temper. Could the wedded Pair but habituate themselves, for the first Year, to bear with one another's Faults, they would find but little Difficulty afterwards. They that begin ' this State of Life, without Jars at their Setting out, arrive, within a few Months, at a Pitch of Benevolence and Affection, of which the most perfect Friendship is but a faint Likeness. They live together ' in the happy Possession of each other's · Hearts, and by that Means have no in-' different Moments, but their whole Life

· i

·I

· V

t t

6 f

· C

I

. (

6 1

· t

· t

. 0

6 I

6 2

•]

. 1

. 0

· f

s a

Ch. 6. in bis MARRIED STATE. 143

' is one continued Scene of Comfort. A ' Family, like a Ship that is duly trimmed, wants neither Sail nor Ballast, when Man and Wife live in this Manner; but where these Precautions are not observed, the ' Man often degenerates into a Cynic, the Woman in a Coquet; the Man grows fullen and morose, the Woman, fantastical, impertinent, vexatious, and boifterous, as in the melancholy Case we have ' just seen. Therefore take Warning at 6 other People's Miscarriages. How loathfome it looks for Man and Wife to entertain a malicious Neighbourhood with their domestic Grievances, and mutual Invec-' tives? But rather preserve always a Disposition to be pleased, and resolve never to call in the Mob to judge your Cause, or to witness the Imperfections of your Family. The married Pair often take Things ill of each other, which no one else would take Notice of in either of ' them; therefore each of them should keep ' a Watch upon the particular Biass, which ' Nature has fixed in their Minds, that it ' may not draw too much, and lead them out of the Paths of Reason; which never ' fails to happen, if the one in every Word ' and Action affects the Character of being ' rigid and severe, and the other of being

S

1-

is

144 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

proud and imperious, Mrs. Jones, who had hearkened most attentively to these Instructions, thought her own Happiness was too much obliged to Mr. Allworthy for fo feafonable Advice, not to return him her hearty Thanks; and with her Husband promised to consult their own Interest so effectually, as to endeavour all in their Power to copy it in their future Conduct.

Socred so the Mercury CHAP. VII.

. Strange Discoveries made at Salisbury.

against the decilored with their TPON our Arrival at Salisbury, my Lord met with an Express, that demanded his immediate Return to London; fo that, having committed the Ladies Constantia and Teresa to the Care of Mr. Allworthy, he departed for the Metropolis, accompanied with their Husbands, and all his Servants but two. After this fudden Difappointment, the good old Gentleman, who did not want the Politeness of a Courtier, no more than the Gravity of a Philosopher, used his best Endeavours to render his Conversation agreeable to those left behind. His first Proposal was to rest a Day or two in this City, and to take the Diversion of the Affembly, which, he was informed, would

be

fi

fu

fil

Ch. 7. in bis MARRIED STATE. 145 be kept on the following Evening. He alfo informed Mr. Jones and his Bride, that his Sifter Blifil died, and was buried in St. 's Church, over whom or as near to the Grave of her Remains as possible, he now intended to give Orders for the erecting a handsome Monument to her Memory, with the following Epitaph:

Sacred to the Memory

ELIZABETH BLIFIL, Mother to Thomas Jones, of Norton, Elq; By her first Husband.

And of JOHN BLIFIL by her fecond Marriage, Who.

For his unnatural Conspiracy against his Brother, Was

> Difinherited of a large Estate By

His Uncle TIMOTHY ALLWORTHY Efq; Who placed this Monument.

S

0

r,

r,

1-

is

in

ie

ld 20

And in Confequence of this Resolution, Mr. Partridge was dispatched to the Parish Officers for an Account of their Demands for fuch an Erection in their Church, and to a Mason to undertake it .- The Church-warden was no fooner informed that Mrs. Blifil's Brother and Son were within his Reach,

146 The History of TOM JONES Book II. than he immediately waited upon him with a Bill of Fees for her Burial, which had never been discharged; and refused to treat about her Monument till that first Demand was fatisfied. It is true the Money was no great Matter. But Mr. Allworthy, who had allowed Mr. Dowling fixty odd Pounds to bury his Sifter in a genteel Manner, could not forbear exclaiming against his Embezzlement, and began to suspect that the Undertaker had also been left unpaid; which proved too true: For, while they were difputing about the Fees, the House overhearing the Cause of their Debate, and knowing the Affair, had fent for the Undertaker, who pushed into the Room in a very abrupt Manner with his Bill, protesting he would not leave fuch shuffling Impostors till he should be fully satisfied. first the Clamour was so great, that Mr. Allworthy could not gain Admission to speak; but their Invectives being pretty well spent, he with his usual Moderation gained their Attention, while he folemnly affirmed that he could produce Receipts, under the Hand of Mr. Dowling, Attorney at Law, for the respective Sums they now demanded; however, he added, that if they were not paid, he was ready to pay them the very last Farthing. Thefe

These last Words were productive of very great Effects. Mr. Church warden no longer helitated to agree about the Monument, and offered too, of his own Accord, to wait for the former Dues till this Bill was made out, which should be sent to his Worship, by the first Opportunity; for by this Time Partridge had given them to understand, that the old Gentleman was a Justice of the Peace; and when he was withdrawn, Mr. Cook the Undertaker, with all the Compliafance imaginable, begged Pardon for accosting a Gentleman fo rudely, as he now found him to be; but that if the Truth was known, he could not have been blamed, had he arrested him at first Sight : For, Mr. Dowling had represented Mrs. Blifil's Brother in a very bad Light.

In what Light, pray, replied Mr. Allworthy, did Mr. Dowling fet me? 'Truly he had well nigh persuaded us, that
your Worship was—, was—, I am
ashamed to speak it before your Worship's
Face.'—'Prithee, Man! cried Mr. Allworthy, with a Tone that indicated more
Perturbation of his Temper than usual,
What was it?' Truly then, said Cook, I
will not mince the Matter. He said, you

ir

at

nd

ne

N-

id.

ar-

ese

H 2 was

148 The History of Tom Jones Book II. was a d-ned Son of a Whore; for that you had got a Bastard by your own Sister, and that you had killed her Husband, one Capt. Blifil, I think was his Name, as he was walking in your Garden; and that, after breaking your Sifter Blifil's Heart, you had got her Will out of his ' Hands, with an Intention to wrong her legitimate Son, Mr. John Blifil, and to fet up her bastard Child, Thomas Jones, as he was called in your Family, for her · Heir at Law; on a Pretence that she, on her Death-bed, acknowledged him to be her own Child, born in Wedlock, to one ' Mr. Summer, an Oxford Scholar: And he added, that you had offered him a large Bribe to publish this Story; and moreover that you promised to provide for him as olong as he lived, would he but stand true to the Trust you should repose in him in this Affair. But he protested that no · Advantages to himself should ever sway with him to rob the Innocent; that he had got a rough Draught of Mrs. Blifil's Will; that he should take such Measures, as might ruin all your Schemes in Favour of Jones; and in the mean Time propofed, that I and my Dame, with himself, ' should witness that Draught of the Will, he affured us had been made by her Order,

Ch. 7. in bis MARRIED STATE. 149

der, and figned also with her Mark, to prevent any Mischance that might befall the fair Copy; under a Pretence that your · Worthip was a covetous old Ufurer, that would never be persuaded to pay a Doit without Trouble; and that he had the · Promise of young Mr. Blifil to discharge my Bill, with Interest, as soon as he could bring Things to bear. Nor had I come now to trouble your Worship with my Demands, but that we have been told ' you have outwitted the Attorney, and by turning the Tables upon him, have made both him and the young Gentleman Blifil fly their Country. So that, as I had a · just Demand, I hope no Offence, if I have not carried myfelf altogether fo handfomely in making it, as I ought to have done, to a Gentleman of Worth and Integrity; confidering the Prejudice which ' fuch Infinuations, averred with the ftrongeft Protestations of Justice, raised against vour Worship.

What a Scene of Iniquity is here difclosed? replied the good old Gentleman, with great Amazement. And after a fhort Pause, Could he be so base to accuse me of Incest, Murder, and Forgery! What will this World come to! Can H 3 any

o y

e s

s,

ur os

ill,

)r-

er,

150 The History of Tom Jones Book II. any Man be fo deceitful to conceive fuch wicked Intentions, against a Family that trufted him with all their Secrets ! So ungrateful to meditate their Ruing whose Bread he eats !- I can produce Evidence that he confessed, my Sister upon her Death-bed commanded him to inform me. that Mr. Jones is my Nephew, and her own Son, - and that she, dying in a few Minutes after, never spoke more. As for her Will, I never faw ity nor ever once heard it mentioned. And as for the Death of the Captain her Husband, I am in no Pain about it: He certainly died of an Apoplexy.—There were no Signs of a ' violent Death about him .- Can you, Mr. · Cook, help me to a Sight of this Will, you and your Dame figued at Mr. Dowling's Request?' ' No, faid he, but we are rea-4 dy to testify the Truth, if called upon. Well then, continued Mr. Allworthy, I will call upon you at a proper Time. But you will oblige me much, if you are thoroughly acquainted, as you feem to be, with Mr. Dowling, to give me the Character he bears in this Neighbourhood.'

Mr. Cook did not hesitate a Moment:
No Man, says he, knows Mr. Dowling
better than I. He is an arrant Lawyer,
all

Chagod in hisoMARRED STATE? 151 all Paint, all Plaister; honest without, and Knave within! He was born at Tounton; of a mean Parentage. He only inherited the common Benefits of Mankind, the Earth to walk on, the Air to breathe in; and all the Rivers of the World to drink of. He was educated in a Charity-School founded by an old Usurer, and bound from thence to a Hackney-writer of Staples-Inn, London. And though he was fo leanly provided for by Nature, he re-' folved, after his Time was expired, to fet up for himfelf; and though he wanted Materials, he was not ill furnished with Resolution. Nature had bleffed him with a lively Wit, which he improved by Stu-'dy; but his Education had very much weakened his Conscience, which he entire-' ly wore out by Practice: So that at last he turned it out of Service, as having no more Occasion for its Dictates. Money was his Passion, which he was resolved to get by any Means. I have often heard him fay, 4 Honour and Conscience jingle prettily in the Ear, but not in the Pocket. And a Man that intends to thrive, must not fteer by foreign Opinion, nor start at a Set of formal Notions, that cramp Merit, pall the Spirits, and confine Activity to a LA He is no arrant Lawven

152 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

fmall Compass. Thus by Constitution he was one Fourth of a Rascal; by Edu-' cation he commenced Villain, and to comblete himfelf in the Art of Ruination he commenced Attorney. He gleaned up all the little Artifices of his Profession, and augmented the Number of Quirks, by a great Supply of his own Invention. Which gained him great Repute for his Abilities, and much dreaded by every one, that had · him for an Adversary :- Happy was he ' that could retain him in their own Cause. "-But as he would act on any Side for Advantage, Gold and Right went Hand in Hand, and Wrong perpetually waited upon Poverty. Mr. Dowling always ex-' amined his Client's Purfe, before he would ' take his Cause in Hand; and always pro-' neurced the Suit just, if the Man was found wealthy; but where there was no ' Money, there never was any Title.-His first Practice was not far from Wapping, near London; where having wheedled many into his Snares, and decoyed them to their Ruin, he was at length discovered, despised, and shunned by every honest Man; so that he was obliged to ' shift his Tent, and wheel off into the Country, to forage upon the Peafant, as ne the Son Cook the Eather

Ch. 7. in bis MARRIED STATE. 153 he had gulled the Merchant. And after * several Encampments, he at last pitched his Tent in a Village not far from this City, where he found the good People in a neighbourly Correspondence, who had on Leifure to think of Feuds, nor Mind to flart Quarrels; who carried on their own Buliness, without entering into the Concerns of others, and enjoyed their own, without the troublesome Thought of Fear and Envy. But he was no fooner fettled amongst them, than the Scene changed; the Farmers began to talk of Law and Increachments, of Forfeitures and · Seizures. Tom and Dick laid down the · How goes the Market, to talk of Statutes, · Precedents, Reports, Writs of Error, Re-" verse of Judgment, &c. and instead of frequenting the Church on Sundays for In-· struction and Edification, they now meet . Mr. Dowling at the Swan, to confult how they might cheat the Minister out of his · Fees and Tythes. And when he had once filled their Heads with the Stratagems of Law to dilturb the Union that had Time ' immemorial subsisted between the honest 'Countrymen and their Parson, he found it no hard Matter to set them at Variance amongst themselves. There was Action upon Action; the Son fued the Father · for H 5

154 The History of Tom Jones Book II. for Allowance; the Wife fet upon her Husband for a separate Maintenance; one mortgaged his Tenement to recover Damages; another pleaded away 100 l. per Annum, to chop at Five, and in the End, People bought Law, and Dowling swept away all their Money; for even they who gained their Suit, lost their Capital, to quit his Bill of Charges. But he played his Game fo excessive high, that the very · Boors detected his Knavery. And good Mr. Eusebius, who was lately retired from Business, so diligently exposed his Artifices, and fatisfactorily composed their Differences, left to his Arbitration, without Charges or Loss of Time, that his Trade began to flag, his Customers fell off, his Business dropped; those Streams that fed his Pockets were dammed up, his good Fortune was at a Stand; Lucre ebbed, and Curses flowed in upon him. Dowbing raged at this Disappointment, and poured out a Tun of Gall upon Eusebius, which, Sir, you know is the last Retreat of Anger and Malice. Resolutions altered with his Passion, like Waves in a Tempest, one rolled upon the Back of another. Sometimes he was for preferring an Action against him, for practifing the Law without a Licence; at another Time, hearing Ch. 7: in bis MARRIED STATE. 155 hearing that the Gentleman had formerly studied at Oxford, he threatened to represent him to the Government as a difaffected Person. But Eusebius laughed at his Threats, and pitied his Malice; and Dowling grew as much into Contempt, as before he had been the Oracle of a deceived People; so that once more he was obliged to feek another Habitation; and we hear that he has great Expectations from Mr. Blifil, who, he gives out, has promised him Half your Worship's Estate, provided he can set aside the Legitimacy of Mr. Jones, of which he makes no Doubt' 'No Doubt, cried Mr. Allworthy with great Emotion; What does the Villain think I will leave it in his · Power to dispose of my Estate at his Pleafure?—It may be he intends to forge a Will for me. But I will guard against all his Wiles, if God spares my Life till the next Affizes; for as I have no Intail upon my Estate, I will put this good Child, 'my Nephew Jones, into full Possession in the Manner as the Law directs; fo as to put it out of the Power of a Will to give him any Trouble.' But looking with great Earnestness at Mr. Cook, he thanked him kindly for this open and candid Narration; defired he would take no Notice of 156 The History of Tom Jones Book II. what had paffed between them; paid him his Bill; and having treated him with the best the Inn could afford, sent him away very well pleafed, and determined to abide by what he had faid concerning Dowling.

very young to a very young Grademan IIVed. Q. A. H. D. of her Pa-

The History of Euphemia.

TATHILE the Gentlemen were thus V employed, a grand Burial paffed under the Window where the Ladies had retired; which, upon Enquiry, they were informed was the Funeral of a Widow Gentlewoman, who preferring a good Name to her own Peace and Quiet of Mind, had facrificed her Life to fatisfy the unbelieving World, that she would rather die, than do any Act, though ever so lawful in itself, that should have the Appearance of being unbecoming her Sex.

Such a Character heightened their Curiofity very much to be more particularly acquainted with her History; which the Landlady, having learned it from common Fame, obliged them with, as follows: o Willy val of bettimined od year 1 This

their never that is a longer speech thanks to

* This Lady's Name was Euphemia; The died for Love; a Love fo violent and indigestive, that she could not throw it off at a less Price than her Life. She was married very young to a very young Gentleman called Dives, one of her Parents Chusing. Mr. Dives, it is true, was ' Master of a very great Estate, and, by 'Right of a Borough within his own Lordhip, was intitled to a Place in Parlia-' ment, as foon as he came at Age; where he has filled a Seat for many Years; yet, though he has proclaimed himself a PA-' TRIOT in every Inn, Tavern, and Coffeehouse, between Westminster and Salisbury, I never heard of any Thing he has performed worthy of that precious Character; and, I hope, I may be allowed to fay-'it; I am no Stranger to what is done in the House; for there is not a Member ' that travels this Road, but gives me the ' Preference to every other Inn in this Ci-' ty.-And as I love Politicks,- and they · love their Bottle, - I always find fome · Opportunity to hearken to their unguarded Discourse, when they are pretty far gone.—But I must not tell all I know.— This I may be permitted to fay, Mr. Dives never made a longer Speech than a No.

158 The History of Tom Jones Book N. No, to fignify his Opposition; and a Yes, to serve the Party, he defired to be thought he was of - +1 loft a good Customer of him, when he died; for he was eminent in his Taste; his Pleasure centered in good Eating and Drinking. And the Phylicians, who to no Purpose forbid him the immoderate Use of them, do positively affirm, that Wine, and the hotter Liquors, haftened his Death. The Lady Euphe-' mia was married to him by the Contrivance of the two Mothers; and it happened luckily for him that she was neither over nice nor enterprizing. And · Dives her Husband died memorable for nothing, but for introducing a Bosom Friend of his to his Lady's Intimacy and ' Favour, and for leffening his Children's · Fortunes, to enlarge her Dowry; by which the became the richest Widow in all our Country: But this Advantage she reaped by his Death produced different Effects. Her own Mother never ceased reading her perpetual Lectures of Widows, that were undone and ruined by marrying a · fecond Time; and as the Husband's Family thought themselves prejudiced by his extraordinary Will, in Favour of his Wife, they were always catching at something to object against her. . The

•)

c v

· r

« A

No. to figurify his Opposition; and a Per.

The Bosom Friend he had introduced to his Lady's Favour was a Gentleman of noble Extraction, named Fidelio; tho' his Forefathers had fo much reduced their Estate, as obliged him to contract his Expences within a very narrow Compass. And his Perfon was fo exquisitely formed to attract the Eye and captivate the Heart of our Sex, that I, must confess, a Woman of more Virtue, than I pretend to, ought not to have been blamed in the Mane ner Euphemia has been treated by a cenforious World.—Dives alone stands guilty, 'in my Opinion. He could not breathe a Day without him-He could not relish his Cups without him; and to guess by his ftrong Recommendations, one would have thought that he intended even to fhare with him the Delights of his Marriage-Bed; he fo frequently forced the young Gentleman upon his Lady; and as often would tell his Wife, that if there were any thing she could more oblige him 'in, than other, 'twould be in tenderly respecting Fidelio, who deserved more Admiration than all Mankind put togec ther.

he

inoliti gnidatary game always carching it loant thave

160 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

I have told you before that Euphemia had been married fo young, that Love had nothing to do in that Affair : Love is by no Means necessary to a Match made up by Friends: but her natural * Temper of Gratitude to one, that used her with Tenderness, inspired her with great * Inclinations to comply, in every Thing, with a Husband so obliging; and consequently, in Obedience to his Commands, admitted Fidelio into her Esteem also. By this Means he was admitted to the greatest Freedom of Conversation; and this let him into a thousand Intimacies, which gave him Opportunities of distin-'guishing himself by a more infinuating Behaviour, than was necessary to a Huss band at Ease, and in full Possession of whatever a Wife can bestow. When Love, that dangerous Enemy of Matrimonial Quiet, which fooner or later compels every · Heart to submit to his Power, was maliciously resolved to disturb that easy Manener of Life, which had existed many Years between Dives and Euphemia: He adorned Fidelio with all the Charms of his Sex, that could appear lovely to the Eyes of Euphemia: dreffed up his Countenance with killing Smiles, furnished his · Eyes

6

6

· t

• c

· ti

'c N

· h

Fi

6 0

· na

Ch. 8. in bis MARRIED STATE, 161

Eyes with Arrows from his own Quiver, and pilfered every one of the Graces to 'complete his Favourite, and make him ' most charming in her Sight, and to her only. And, as my Lady's Chamber-maid told me, her Ladyship, who was no Con-' jurerer in unravelling Mysteries, tho' they were even those of Nature, was so smitten with the brifk Repartees, the well turned Periods, the agreeable Manner of 'telling his Story, eternal Compliances, and with the perfect Resignation of her new Guest, that she could neither eat nor fleep: and in fine, she pined away with a Sort of languishing Melancholy, which was immediately interpreted to be the Vapours; a Distemper, which I have heard, has long been in Fashion amongst the Ladies in and about London, but scarce ever heard of it in these Parts before. And 'now I am told, our Physicians introduce this only to fignify a Distemper they ' can't strictly give any Name to. So when ' the Doctor was consulted about my Lady's Malady, he scrupled not to pronounce her very far gone in the Vapours, and feriously advised her Husband to take care of her, lest her Distemper should terminate in Lunacy. The good-natured Dives upon this Caution fo punctually followed

162 The History of TOM JONES Book II. the Doctor's Advice, that his over Officiousness served only to make her more dejected: Every thing he did was difpleafing; it went even against her Nature to 5 speak civilly to him : If he touched her Hand, her Diftemper was doubled; but when he attempted to kifs her Lips, it increased her Vapours to a Frenzy; and fhe refifted his Careffes with a Squeaking bike one poffessed with an Evil Spirit. * Thus, tho' fhe was insensible of the Cause, the Love of Fidelio caused her to hate her Husband; she could not accuse him of any Unkindness, and she certainly respected A him very much, and had no Intentions to betray his Bed; but she now could not receive him without Frowning; when he fpoke to her, the answered him perversely, f and from the Purpose; and hated to eat or sleep where he was. But when Fidelio entered the Parlour or the Summer house, fhe smiled, even against her Inclination; her Eyes danced with Joy, her Heart rebounded in her Breast, there were no more Signs of the Vapours; the new stamped her very Air and Words; her Conversation took a gay Turn; all that Fidelio faid, or did, delighted her. She could fit at Table, eat, drink, play at Cards; and her Husband became tolerable to her, 207-32 · fo Ch. 8. in bis MARRIED STATE. 162 fo long as Fidelio made one of the Company. He inspired her with Smiles of Serenity and perpetual Joy; but his Depar-Sture turned her all into Gloominess, and clouded her Understanding with Mists and cloudy Vapours. The indulgent Hufband easily perceived this Alteration in his Wife, and without any Reflection to her Prejudice, attributing all her Esteem for Fidelio to the same friendly Passion, with which he himself had introduced him to her Company, and continued to prefer him above all other Men, begged him as earnestly, as if he was suing for the greateft Good, to keep his Wife Company till her Health could be restored; seeing that nothing but his Presence was able to divert her. This Intimacy, tho' fo generoully courted by the Husband, was innocently defired by Euphemia. And the Season drawing near for the Lady's going into the Country, according to Prescription, for her Health, she could not refrain exf pressing her Desire of his Company to their Country-Sear, and even spoke to her ' Husband to intreat Fidelio to go along with them: Who was so far from difdiking the Propofal, that he was over-' joyed at the Sympathy he found in his Wife's Inclinations; and bid her be easy, for Fidelio should go with them. Fidelio, who plainly discovered Euphemia's Distemper, readily complied. And they were no sooner got down, but she fancied herself much better; because, as Fidelio was more with her, consequently her melancholy Fits were shorter, except on those Days they went a Hunting: then she relapsed, and had nothing to do, but to have the Vapours to Persection: So that at last she declared herself a mortal Enemy to that Diversion, and obliged them to keep at Home to revive her Spirits.

But Dives, attributing the Melancholy of his Lady to Want of Company, when he and Fidelio were upon the Chace, in-' vited a young Relation of her's, named · Euphrasia, to come and pass away the Summer at his Seat, in order to divert his Lady in their Absence. Euphrasia, who was very witty, entirely agreeable, and full of Amusement, readily accepted the Invitation; but when she had been come a few · Days, and examined with her Difcernment the different Inclinations and Interests of the Family, in which was entertained, " she was too much of a Coquet, to see herfelf the only Female unregarded. It is true she did not expect that her Charms could, Impression on Dives, who had never been

'in Love in his Life; unless we may call

that Love, to be a good and kind Huf-

band to a Wife that he had married when

he was a Child, and grew up with him;

but rather call them tender Friendships, free from the Disquiets, the Hopes and

Fears for Possession; their Desires and

their very Joys are calm; and, as I have

heard some of my polite Guests reasoning

upon this Subject: Such a Couple, say they,

may be faid to discharge their Duty with

' a good Grace, wearing their Fetters with

ono Inclination to Freedom: But the fierce

Delights and ravishing Sweets of consent.

' ing Love (pardon me, Ladies, for repeat-

ing the Discourse of Men) after Toils,

' Affiduities, Despairs, and ardent Desires,

' which are the Companions of a long and

mutual Courtship, between those that are

able to judge for themselves, are foreign

to a Marriage imposed upon us, before we

have either Age or Leisure to desire a

' Change of our Condition-Parents think

their Children can never be unhappy, if

they do but take Care of their Interest;—

which indeed I speak more feelingly, as it

was my own Cale, tho' I am now reduced

to keep an Inn: and this is the true Reason

166 The History of TOM JONES Book II.

that we fo feldom see People of Condition

fortunate in their Marriages. The Men

feek their Diversions abroad, and, not to

excuse our own Sex, the Ladies, often are

onot more innocent; at best their Husbands

· Inclinations elsewhere never fail to render

them miferable. Pardon me, Ladies, for

this Digression.—I have great Reasons for

what I fay ;-no body can tell my Mil-

fortune :- but I won't trouble you any

further with my Case.

· Euphrafia, I say, expected no great Ad-· miration from Dives, who had never been in Love; preferred his Bottle and his · Hounds to all the Charms of a fine Face, · a graceful Air, and a fweet deluding Song: but she formed a real Attempt upon the · Heart of Fidelio. Whenever she spoke to · him, the foftened the Tone of her Voice, ' called Smiles to her Mouth, and Dimples ' to her Cheeks; affumed a dying Sweetness ' in her Eyes; and threw out the Bait of ' Love with the Artifice of a skilful Hand: onot that she loved him: any other Man ' would have ferved her turn as well. But a true Coquet thinks all Pleasures insipid, that are not mingled with the Pretence

of Love; for their varying Tempers never know what true Love is. Her Pride was

6

Ch. 8. in bis MARRIED STATE. 167 to be admired; the was perfuaded of her Cousin Euphemia's Passion for Fidelio; and he mortally bated that Lady, whom she could not rob of her Gallant. This, when s all other Artifices failed, made her attack · Fidelio, whom she found by chance alone in the Garden, with Reproaches for his Neglect of her; and had well nigh difgraced our Sex, by daring him to rob her of her Virtue. She was so plain to tell him, that it was highly unnatural, in a Man of his ' Age, to let a young Lady pass so ne-' glected: that the could not believe that ' those were Times for Gentlemen to leave ' their Hearts behind them; and that as new · Places generally produced new Conquests ' to one of his Merit, fhe did not doubt but that he might, if he pleased for the prefent, forget the Lady he had left behind him.—But Fidelio, who knew two well, that Coquets defire nothing fo much of the Conquest as the Reputation of it, and therefore are the first themselves in proclaiming the Advantage they gain over other Women in the Men's Esteem, carefully avoided the Snare; and tho' fhe conc tinued to ridicule him for his Shynefs, and s artfully strove to draw from him a Con-· fession of a more than ordinary Regard for · Euphemia; the could prevail on him no farther. 168 The History of TOM JONES Book II.

father, than to dare him to a Game at Romps; of which Eupbrasia availed herself effectually to discover her Cousin's Affections for Fidelio. For taking the Advantage of Mr. Dives's Coming into the Garden, she made the best of her Way to Eu-' phemia's Closet; where all tousled, discomposed, ruffled, and quite out of Breath, she flung the Door open in a pretended Fright, threw herfelf upon the Floor, and accused Fidelio of an Intention and Attempt to ravish her, had it not been prevented by the sudden Coming of her Cousin Dives. At which Words, Euphemia grew pale; and immediately new-born Jealoufy flushed her Neck and Breasts with Rage and Fire, and intercepted her very Words; when immediately the cunning Euphrafia, who had done all this to provoke her, cried out, Lord Cousin! are you out of your Senses? What's the matter with you? I will lay my Life, you are fick of a Diftemper you know not. O' my Conscience you are jealous, and love Fidelio. The Fact was too evident to be denied; but the jealous Euphemia answered her only with a Flood of Tears; and then all was well enough.—We know, Ladies, that a Woman never dies of a Distemper of the Mind, when she can be brought to cry it out.

· a

"tl

n

m

· D

· M

s the

of

· Ad

afte

at

ma

Ch. 8. in bis MARRIED STATE. 169 out. And, as foon as Euphrafia found her Cousin was recovered of her crying Fit, ' she left her: Upon which Fidelio, who was watching his Opportunity to undeceive Euphemia, for he had overheard all that had paffed, approached her with great Respect, and in the most infinuating and passionate Terms begged to be heard. He informed her of his whole Affair with Eu-· phrasia; which he delivered with such an Air of Truth, that it immediately dispersed · Euphemia's Jealoufy; and Euphrafia, not * finding the Effect she expected, to set them * at Variance, resolved to remove her Situation; to proclaim her Coufin's Amour with Fidelio, and to try the best of her Skill to ruin their Reputation .- And as the World is known to be so uncharitable to Lovers. as always to impute bad Confequences to * their most innocent Conversation; she was no fooner got back to the City, than she ' made her Discovery the Subject of all her Discourse, and persuaded her Cousin's · Mother formuch of the Reality of her Story, that she wrote her Daughter a whole Sheet of Reproaches for what had passed, and of Admonitions for a better Behaviour there-' after. Nor did her Malice stop here; for at last finding out a blunt old Gentle-" man, who was intimate with Dives, she e perfuaded

n

10

d

ur

if-

ace

he

but

only

was

nat a

fthe

ry it

out.

170 The History of TOM JONES Book II.

' persuaded him also to write Advice to him.

to take Care of Fidelio and his Wife:

Which had this fatal Effect, to fill the

· Head of Dives with Jealouly. This News

arrived at a Time he was very much indif-

posed with the Gout : He could not be-

· lieve what he read; the Pain of his Body

foon gave Place to that of his Mind; he

could not but wonder, how he alone should

thus long be blind to what was fo clearly

feen by the World. His Brains were im-

e mediately employed to find out an Op-

portunity to get rid of that dreadful Fide-

· lio from under his hospitable Roof. But

he kept the Anguish close confined in his

own Breast, not without a Million of

· Times acculing himself, for so imprudent-

Iy preffing his Wife to efteem Fidelio.

· Nor was his Lady without her Diffrac-

tions, upon the Receipt of her Mother's

Letter. Since she had been acquainted with

her own Distemper, this prudent Lady

avoided her Lover, and fought her Huf-

band; and omitted nothing an honest

Woman could do in like Extremities. She

mastered herself, as to those Disgusts

· she formerly seemed to receive from his

· Careffes, and declined being entertained

by Fidelio, as usual; she prescribed herself

a perfect Rule of Behaviour, from which " fhe

Ch. 8. in bis MARRIED STATE. he was refolved, rather to die, than to de-' part; and endeavoured to justify her Conduct to her Mother, by informing her of Euphrasia's Malice. But as Fidelio was 'ftill permitted to vifit her, and he, being ' ignorant of his Friend's Dilgusts at him, was as officious as ever to demonstrate his great Regard and Gratitude to a Fa-' mily, from whence he had received fo " many Favours: So that the World, pre-' possessed with the Misrepresentations of Euphrafia, and, knowing him to be per-' petually there, continued their Censure; "and pretended to be privy to criminal Familiarities, that were not so much as thought of, by the injured Friends: 'Till at last Dives, wore down by the ' frequent Returns of his Distemper, and the more acute Pains of his Mind, and "not able any longer to conceal his Jealou-' fy, tho' he, after the strictest Observation ' and Scrutiny into his Wife's Conduct, could not fix any one Imputation upon ' her Character, called her to him one Day, ' after a dreadful Fit, and asked her, If he had ever failed in a tender Husband's Duty? To which she replied, in a Flood of Tears, that he had not only exceeded ' all others, but even her own Expectations and Defert, however partial a Wo-I 2

is

d

172 The History of Tom Jones Book II. man might be to herfelf wwell then, faid he fornewhat abruptly, How can you excufe yourfelf for for badly performing ' yours? And gave her the Letter to read, which the old Friend had fent him into the Country. Upon which the threw herfelf upon her Knees at his Bed-side, and wept fo bitterly, that he was almost per-' fuaded of her Guilt; but told her that he was ready to conceal and pardon her · Crime, provided the would be ingenuous. · Euphemia, who abhorred a Lye, as much as ' a Breach of her Chastity, and held it unworthy of that generous Confidence her ' Hufband had reposed in her, to abuse it, told him all she had suffered from the Beginning to that present Moment. And " she so naturally and justly exposed the " Malice of Euphrasia, and defended her own and Fidelio's Innocence, who had never attempted any thing, but what might have been heard and feen by all the World, that Dives was convinced that they had been grofly abused. He not only pardoned her unvoluntary Passion for Fidelio, of which she had never given him any Testimony; but returned her Thanks for fo well discharging her Duty, when it was fo powerfully opposed by her In-' clinations: only he blamed his own Si-· lence.

Ch. 80 in bis MARRIED STATE. 173 Mence. He wished that he had spoken fooner of it to her, that he might fooner have received that Satisfaction, which he was now afraid came somewhat too late; for that he believed the smothering of his Grief at fuch Reports had precipitated his Death, which he was fensible was on now coming fast upon him. And to confirm his good Opinion of her, and that " The had lost none of his Esteem, he made his Will fo much in her Favour, that, fhould he die, the might be the richest Widow in the whole Kingdom; with no other Restriction, but that of not bestowing herfelf, upon his Decease, to Fidelio: not that he suspected any Harm in him, but left the censorious World should thereby be confirmed of the Truth of those Reports, which the base Euphrasia had spread abroad, Euphemia resolving, if ' possible, to over-rate her Husband's Ge-* nerofity, promifed him more, never to marry again, tho' it were ever fo much to her Honour and Advantage. And Dives, being fully convinced that he had nothing to accuse but his own Indiscretion. by introducing a Man of Fidelio's Merit to his Wife, died, foon after, a Sacrifice to an ill grounded Jealoufy, and an eminent is now of the I 3

n

ZS .

en

n-

Si-

174 The History of TOM JONES Book H.

Warning to all Hufbands from falling

s into the like Inadvertency, I and lo star?

had with Divers on his Death-bed 4 The News of his Death no fooner reached the Ears of Euphrasia, but she doubled her Diligence, to convince the World that her Cousin would certainly ' marry Fidelia; and she was but too successful in gaining Credit to all her Insi-' nuations to their Disadvantage. Where-' as poor Madam Euphemia, Heart-broke · with inward Strugglings between Love and cruel Decency; full of Veneration and grateful Tenderness to her departed Husband; awed and terrified by her Mother's perpetual Remonstrances; · racked at the Remembrance of Fidelio's ' Charms, and the Promise she had made to Dives; forfook the Town to retire to a small Seat, where she gave up herself to a perpetual Melancholy, and much ' impaired her Health by the Conflicts of her Mind. As to Fidelio, when he came to condole with her the Loss of their common Friend, he allowed much to Decency; nor did he for fome Time fig-' nify any thing of his Pretenfions. And, when he opened the Defires of his Heart to her, she readily allowed that there was nobody she loved but him; she told 6 him.

Ch. 8. in bis MARRIED STATE. 175 him, with the fame Sincerity, the whole State of her Heart: the Discourse she had had with Dives, on his Death-bed; the Promise she had made him, and her Re-· folution to adhere to it; but then she beg-· ged him to fee her no more, fince it could onot be fignificant to either, but hurtful to both. Fidelio had too great a Regard for his virtuous Lady to give her any further Concern upon this Subject. But her Mother, taking the Alarm from his · Visits, never ceased teazing her, 'till she fell down right fick: She was continually remembering what she owed to the Memory of her Husband; how poor and scandalous it would appear to the World to marry a Beggar, as the called Fidelio; and that she would rather follow her to her Grave, than fee her married to one, whose very Acquaintance had been the Death of 6 fo indulgent an Husband, and the only · Blot of her own Life. So that, unable to · bear up under all these Disquiets, this is the Lady Euphemia that now was carried with fo much funeral Pomp under the Window to the Cathedral, there to be intere red, having not been long in giving the World a very fingular Proof of Love and · Constancy. — Hark! the Bell rings; plot sol sink and It 4 sit shore Ladies, 176 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

Ladies, I must beg your Pardon. I am

A wanted at the Bar, and tadmideenad a

fering femering femering fering Value.

lets the Mention of either pals, without pl-

Of Cenfure, Scandal, and Defamation.

TITE need not confine ourselves to the foregoing Example, where you are told of a virtuous Ladycenfured, scandalised, and defamed, without ever having it in her Power, tho' she was innocent of what was laid to her Charge, to retrieve that good Name, which Malice and Envy had robbed her of, in the Opinion of the World: But in Fact it threw her into a deep Melancholy, and drove her first from all Company, and then to the Grave. We need not, I fay, confine ourselves to this one Example; for let us furvey other Families, or only review our own Lives; and we shall find that the greatest Part of Vexation and Uneafiness in Life proceeds from those Calumnies and Reproaches, which a malicious and vain Tongue has fpread abroad against their Neighbours: Which is not only a direct Opposition to Civility, but it is a certain Sign of an ill Heart: A Vice arising from a Neglect of what is laudable in ourselves, and an Impatience of feeing it in another; otherwise Virtue would

on provoke, nor Beauty displease, to such a Degree, that one given to Scandal never lets the Mention of either pass, without offering something to lessen its Value.

Is not Lady Euphemia a memorable Proof of that Elevation of Soul, which preferred Death to a Life of Infamy? She pined away in Anguish, and loathed her Being, because the could not revenge the fecret Wound given. to her Reputation. And to speak in general; though we are often fure that the Censures, which are passed upon us, are uttered by those, who know nothing of us, and have neither Means nor Abilities to form a right Judgment of us; we cannot forbeat being grieved at their Aspersions.-Here is a Supply of Malice, of Pride, of Industry, and even of Folly in the Weakeft, when they fet their Hearts upon it, that makes a strange Progress in Mischief .-Hence it has been observed that few have done more harm than those, who have been thought to be able to do least. So that there cannot be a greater Error, than to believe a Person, whom we see qualified with too mean Parts to do Good, to be therefore incapable of doing Hurt; for Fools project, act, and conclude, with fuch notable Inconsistence, that no regular Course I 5

178 The History of Tom Jones Book H. of Thought can evade or counterplot their prodigious Contrivances.

There is no honest Person but sets as high a Value upon a good Name, as upon Life itself; and I cannot but think that they, who privily affault the one, would destroy the other, could they do it with the same Secrecy, so as to escape unpunished. Don't you observe, in the Case of poor Euphemia; they, that rob a Woman of her Reputation, despoil a poor defenceless Creature of all that makes her valuable; turn her Beauty into Loathfomeness, and leave her friendless, abandoned, and undone, as to the Opinion of a censorious World. Besides, many Tempers are so soft, that the least Calumny gives them Pains, which they are not able to bear with any fort of Composure; but give themselves up to strange Fears, gloomy Reflections, and deep Melancholy, which often ends in Madness, or untimely Death. In a Word, nothing is so tender as a Lady's Reputation, that a Stain once got in their Fame, is hardly ever to be washed away. Therefore I would have the Defamer know that he is making Fools merry, and wife Men fick; and that, in the Eye of confidering Persons, he has less Compunction than the common Ch. 9.1 in bis MARRIED STATE. 179 common Hangman, and less Shame than a common Prostitute. Yet,

It is a most sad and melancholy Reslection, that it is hardly possible to come into Company, where we do not find Men and Women pulling one another to Pieces; nay, the very Encomiums of some People are no other than an Introduction to Scandal. Praife, when closed with an Exception, has been found the most successful Means of blasting the Credit of the most deserving, whom the artful Coquet, or envious Spectator, loads with a Catalogue of fome notorious Weaknesses and Infirmities, without even pretending to know the Certainty of any one Accusation: for these Vermin of Society, and Caterpillars, that crawl and fublist upon the Reputation of the Innocent and Praise-worthy, seldom or ever pretend to any personal Knowledge of the Vices or Miscarriages, they labour to fix upon those that are the Objects of their Envy or Malice; but endeavour to make all Good and Evil to confift in Report; and with Whifpers, Calumnies, and Impertinencies, to have the Conducting of those Reports, fo as to cover their own Faults, or to shew they are not worse than their Neighbours. For I verily believe, that none are more industrious 1

dustrious in publishing the Blemishes of an extraordinary Reputation, than such as lie open to the same Censures in their own Characters, and say bas seemed needed

But why should it be wondered that this Vice is become to common, when there are so many that encourage Tale-bearers and Whisperers, of whom it may be as justly observed, that a Person, who takes Delight in hearing the Faults of others, shews fufficiently that he has a true Relish of Scandal, and confequently that he is well stored with the Seeds of this Vice? The Mind, which is gratified with hearing the Reproaches that are cast upon others, will find the same Pleasure in relating them; and will be the more prone to do it, as he or she will naturally imagine every one of their Acquaintance is delighted, in the same Degree. A month of doing the

Therefore we should endeavour to wear out of our Minds this criminal Curiosity, which is perpetually heightened and inflamed by listening to such Stories, as tend to the Disreputation of those, whom perchance we know nothing of; or, it may be, deserve not to have that Infamy cast upon them. We should never incline to believe

Ch. 9. in bis MARRIED STATE. 181

lieve the uncharitable, more than the goodnatured Report; nor give any Sort of Credit to the Report of Actions we never faw between Parties; and we should examine our Hearts, whether we do not find a fecret Inclination to propagate fuch Reports, as tend to the Difreputation of our Neighbour. For, whatever Pleafure People may take in the whispering about the defamatory Character of another, they will find infinitely greater Satisfaction in conquering the Temptations they are under, by letting the Secret die within their own Breasts, even tho' the Fact be true and justifiable. lay this down for a Rule: If there be any Thing advanced, without a Person, who can fay whence he had it; or which is attested by one, who forgot who told it him, or who had it from one of so little Consideration, that he did not think it then worth his Notice; all such Testimonies as these should be thought too slight, to gain any Credit against the Innocence and Honour of any Person whomsoever. nein a that petualist heighbened

And the second fact burnes with

spon them. We should never incline to be

The flator attent of the for whom shift in the case of the first in the case of the first in the case of the case

popular be favoured with his Hand the book. The popular to the following of the types get popular to the following source of the types.

An Adventure at the Assembly, worthy of your Attention.

TEXT Day the Ladies put the Justice in Mind of his Promise to carry them to the Assembly that Evening; and the good Woman, their Hostes, readily introduced him to one of the Subscribers, who lodged at the same Inn; and very complaisantly proferred his Service to usher him and his Company at the appointed Hour.

At Six o' Clock he returned, and, attended by one of the Stewards, conducted the Gentlemen and Ladies into the Assembly-Room, who immediately attracted the Eyes of the whole Company, who, however, were much more delighted with their genteel and unreferved Behaviour. Mr. Jones, warmed with the sparkling Charms of his Bride, who now first appeared with him in Public, performed his Part so well, that he not only eclipsed the Brilliance of the Gentlemen, but so wounded the Hearts of the Ladies, that he drew their Envy upon his dear Sophia.—Happy was the Lady that could

Ch. 10. in bis MARRIED STAFE. 183 could be favoured with his Hand :- Every Face, yea every Feature and Joint, no longer obedient to the foft Notes of the Mufic, were agitated by his Voice, Gesture, and most obliging Carriage; a Glove, a Fan, or a Muff, spoke the Language of their Hearts .- They were perpetually falling at his Feet to give him an Opportunity to pick them up, and the Ladies to kils them for the Sake of the Hand which had restored them. In Fine, as all their Pleasure centered in the Object of their Sight, as no Harmony could please, which did not comprehend some Word or Action of Mr. Jones. they even drowned the very Fiddle with a continual Buzz, and, ogling through their Fans, glutted their Eyes with admiring the Justness of his Make, the Agility of his Limbs, and the Easiness of his Action; and, tho' he behaved with the greatest Decency and becoming Modesty, there did not want those, who resolved to attack his Affections, and even to promise themselves some Degree of Success, if Fortune would prove only fo favourable to bring him into their Conversation.

Amongst these desperate Admirers of Mr. Jones was the celebrated Toast Mrs. Isabella Armstrong, a young Widow, and Relict 184 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

Relict of an old Officer; who had not only feen a great deal, but paffed through more Intrigues, than perchance any of the Gompany. This Lady foon penetrated the fecret Wishes of the Enamoratas; and, to make them subservient to her own Design, proposed a Scheme to detach Mr. Jones from his own Company, and to engage him for the remainder of the Evening amongst themfelves, which was to defire the Stewards. and fome other Gentlemen, their Particulars, to infift upon detaining Mr. Allworthy and the Ladies under his Care, to pass the Evening at Cards, &c. with them; and to defire Mr. Jones to supply their Attendance upon the Ladies their Acquaintance. The Gentlemen who were as much in Love with the Bride, as we have feen the Ladies with the Bridegroom, eagerly and effectually executed the Proposal; and Mr. Jones, how unwilling soever he might be to separate himself from his own Company, could not do fo much Violence to Good-nature and good Breeding, as to refuse thus to gratify the Civilities received, which feemed to be without any Artifice or Deceit. Papers but a level

But the intriguing Isabella having gained her Point thus far, spread her Nets and armed

16

h

armed every Feature, Action, and Word with additional Charms to enfhare the young Man's Heart, while the other Ladies were fatisfied with his unaffected and free Conversation. Mr. Jones, never suspecting any fuch Defign in the forward Ifabella, expofed himfelf too much to her artful Approaches. The Cards fucceeding to their Refreshment, Habella at last found an Opportunity to difcourse with him alone; and, having got into a pretty deal of Mr. Jones's History, pretended an Intimacy with his deceased Mother in that City; and moreover added that Madam Blifil had made her perfectly acquainted with the Reasons for concealing her first Marriage with Mr. Summer, and the Part she had acted, in regard to himself. She also affured him that upon her Death-bed the faid Mrs. Blifit had made a Will in which the Contents were specified in full, and her whole Estate disposed of in Favour of Mr. Thomas Jones, alias Summer; and moreover that, to prevent any Miscarriage in the Execution of that her last Will and Testament, the had left a Duplicate thereof fealed up, in the Hands of her Husband deceased, which she had feen amongst his Papers but a few Days before, aminant Suggest he from the bearer are such a section

as Have him topunderstand, that she should This pleasing and interesting Narrative wrought powerfully upon Mr. Jones's Attention, who now began to look upon Ifabella as a Messenger from Heaven to reveal the dark Mysteries of his Birth, to discover the Intrigues of Dowling to deprive him of his Birth-right, and to prevent the Destruction, which that unjust Steward had threatened to bring upon his Family. He kiffed her Hand, - he begged Pardon for fuch Liberties, -he repeats the Kifs with more Warmth, - fqueezes it, - faulters in his Words, - blushes, - and turning round upon his Heel-ftamps, - fighs, and recollecting himself - begs her Pardon a fecond Time. Isabella, confummate in the female Art of Love, tho' highly delighted with the unwary Gentleman's Caresses, and the Discovery of a yielding Heart, put on the Gravity of a difconsolate Widow,-feemed much furprized there should appear any thing about her fo attractive to deserve the Notice of a young Gentleman fo very graceful in his Perfon, and engaging in his Air and Address; -pardoned him what he was pleafed to call Freedoms, in fuch Terms, and with fo foft and amiable a Tone, as rather invited a greater Familiarity, than shewed a Dislike: And in Fine fhe

W

C

to

ne th

fee

St

in 70

m

the

We

the

his

the gave him to understand, that she should, at all Times, be obedient to his Commands. My Fortune, said she is easy, and taking Mr. Jones fast by the Hand, there can nothing make my Heart so, fince I have seen you, but yourself."

Isabella was going on, when one of the Stewards gave Notice, that Mr. Allworthy and the Ladies in his Company were impatient to depart: And Mr. Jones, tho? he could not help discovering a pretty deal of Agitation, composed himself so far as to take his Leave of the Ladies in general, with his usual Politeness: and with a becoming Solidity in his Countenance, defired Madam Isabella to do him the Pleasure to breakfast with his Spouse and Uncle, next Morning, before they fet forward on their Journey Home. She who was perfeetly acquainted with the Sex, and no Stranger to the Charms she had for them, immediately read the Emotions of Mr. Jones's Heart in his Eyes, and resolved to make her Advantage of it, in Favour of those Desires, which few, that saw him, but were possessed with.

It was very late, and, being returned to their Inn, Mr. Allworthy, perceiving that his Nephew looked heavy, and attributing that

n

e

C

188 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

that uncommon Weight in his Eyes to be the Effect of a too prodigal Exertion of the vital Spirits at the Evening Entertainment, halfed them all to Bed. Sophia, his dear Sophia, flew to his Arms.—and he, with great Resolution to resist the Temptations of Habella, struggled with Nature, which was already but too far enamoured of this new Adventure. Kind Sleep at last drew the Curtain, and seemingly they both composed to Rest.

I have read that the Infancy of Love is generally the most pleasing Part of it; when new Defires play round the innocent Heart, and gentle Thrillings warm the throbbing Veins, the tender Paffion, by swift, but unperceived Degrees, stealing through all the Seats of Life, affords only gay Wishes, pleasing Dreams, and rapturous Images of Joys to come. But in another Manner did it enter into the Soul of this unquiet Gentleman :- He no fooner found that balmy Sleep had closed the Eyes of his Bride, than he recollected every Word and Action, and even drew a Representation of the lovely Isabella before his Eyes; and giving Way, too much Way, to his impatient Passion, a thousand widely different Thoughts, all wild and ftormy

AR wather material

hi M C trick

.

1

no tha diff

an co

Ch. 19 in bis MARRIED STATE, 189 stormy as a troubled Sea, overwhelmed Reflection, and made Reason giddy.—He was presently sensible that he loved Isabella. and loved to that prodigious Height, that the least Appearance of an Obstacle, and fuch a one lay by him, forbidding by her. Presence any other Love, and a most amiable Object, was worse than Death. at one Time is assamed of giving Way to fuch Thoughts,—and then, like one in Despair, resolves upon any Means to deliver himself from the Tortures of a Love fick Mind.—But at last calmly weighing the Crime, and bad Consequences of this Intrigue, if carried into Action, - he concludes with a Manly and Christian Refolution: - It cannot—it must not be. Both Heaven and Earth forbid it! So-* phia must be the only Object of my Affections. Isabella must not be admitted into my Heart. The wife Borgin on soon

3

e

y gy-

nof

er

es.

ry

e-

re

ch

nd

nd.

ny

Thus in Agonies, not to be expressed, nor indeed to be conceived but in the Heart that was tortured by them, did this half distracted Man pass the Night, after the Conversation with Isabella; however, having determined never to stain his Honour with an illicit Amour; he found his Spirits more composed, the more he resolved to reject the

190 The History of Tom Jone's Book II. the inveigling Overtures of the artful Habella y which he was now convinced, in Reafon, would be fo far from giving him Pleasure, that they must infallibly deprive him of all the Satisfaction he now had in his dear Sophia, and the harmonious Ent joyments of a married State, grounded upon the mutual Affections of a constant Love. And, when he had fo far conquered the Impelus of Nature after Itrange Flesh, he was foon confirmed of its Reafonableness and Necessity from Examples in both Sexes, who, within the Latitude of his own Observation, furnished him with melancholy Scenes of Discontent and Ruin of their Families, occasioned chiefly by some private Amour, of either the Man or Wife: Nor had he entirely forgot the Perplexities which had imbittered the former Part of his Life, brought upon him by yielding too much to the Passion of Lady Bellaston, and to the Beauty of Mrs. Waters; the former having well near cost him his Life; the latter, the more fatal Lofs of his Sophia, whom he loved more dearly than Life the first see Next to the Mexico selfer of the selfer of t Convendation with Launcilas being property convince

These Resections having quite cooled his Passion for Isabella, Mr. Jones began to think upon her Discourse, that had previously

viously engaged his Attention to her Allurements; And indeed to fulpect the Truth of all those pleasing Evidences, which she pretended to deliver concerning his deceased Mother, and his own Legitimacy. He was ready, even, to refolve to order his Servant, if the kept the Appointment at Breakfast-time, to deny him. But after many Contests with Expectations of Profit from her Information, and with good Breeding; which would not permit him to treat any body with fo contemptible a Behaviour, to deny an Appointment; He came to a Refolution to receive her in the Parlour; and, in the Prefence of his Uncle! and Spoufe, to interrogate her upon the Subject of her Acquaintance with his Mother, and the Will she had afferted to be left in her Husband's Hands. And, as he now doubted of her Veracity, as well' as of her Modesty; and looking upon her Intimacy with Madam Bliffl to be nomore than a mere Artifice to worm herfelf into a criminal Conversation with him. Mr. Jones took the first Opportunity, in the Morning, to acquaint his fagacious Uncle with her whole Behaviour, before the came. highed Mention to this we have thated

vicinity of gaged big A reality to her file

The Conversation of two Hours: With Obfervations on Modesty and Whoring.

THE penetrating Judgment of Mr. Allworthy presently detected the Fraud intended to be put upon them by the pretty Widow; and, without being acquainted with the Uneasiness in which Mr. Jones had passed the Night, on her Account, and the hard Conslict between his Love and Lust, he would not suffer his Nephew to stir from his Bed-side, 'till he had armed him against such-like Delusions for the suture, in the following Manner:

Nephew Jones! the World is very deceitful, very wicked. You have not been quite spotless; and, tho' I am convinced of your entire Reformation, hear me with a Resolution to profit by what I shall now say against a lewd Course of Life, which I apprehend is the Snare laid for you, by the Widow. There is but a short Step from the Practice of, to the Hatred of Virtue: And from the highest Felicity, to the worst of Misery, in a Marriage State: It is of great Importance for both Sexes to ask themselves,

6 1

6 t

· whether

Ch. 11. in bis MARRIED STATE. 198 whether they would change Lightness of Heart, Indolence of Mind, chearful Meals, untroubled Slumbers, and gentle Dispositions for a constant Pruriency, which shuts out all Things that are great or indifferent, and clouds the Imagination with Infensibility and Prejudice to all manner of Delight, but fuch as is in "common to all Creatures, that multiply their Kind. The Man, that follows For-' nication, gives up much greater Delight, by pursuing it, than he can possibly enjoy from fuch a Vice, whether the A-' mour be with a fingle Woman or Feme " Covert; with a common Prostitute, or with those that are less profligate. His conjugal Affections, that Mirror, which reflects all the Transactions in a Marriage State with Beauty and Contentment; and his very Reputation and Health, s all fuffer by a lewd Course of Life: To bring Sorrow, Confusion, and Infamy ' into a Family; to wound the Heart of ' a tender Parent, and stain the Life of a ' poor deluded Woman with Dishonour, ' that can never be wiped off.; are Circumflances in my Opinion fufficient to check the most violent Passion, in a Heart, which has the least Tincture of Goodnature and Humanity; and yet the · Loss

K

194 The History of Tom Jone's Book II. Lofs of a good Name, Anguish of Heart, Shame and Infamy are what must in. evitably fall upon a Woman that lofes her Honour, unless the gets over them, by what is much worse, open Impudence and professed Lewdness, Such are the Returns made to her for putting all her Livelihood, Dependance, Virtue, · Reputation, and Innocence into a Man's · Power! Is it not then a Subject of great · Astonishment, that the Deslowerers of In-" nocence, tho' dead to all the Sentiments of Virtue and Honour, are not restrained by Compassion? Can any one purchase . the Gratification of a Moment at so dear a Price, and entail a lasting Misery on others, for such a transient Satisfaction to himself; a Satisfaction that is sure, at fome Time or other, to be followed with the fevere Pangs of a loaded Conscience? Is it not an inexplicable Paradox for a Man to affirm and protest that he admires and adores the very Person he attempts, all in his Power, to ruin?—When a Man thoroughly confiders that he gives up his wery Being, as a Man of Integrity, the Moment that he commences a Gallant, " one should think he should want no fur-

ther Argument to deter him from such a

· Pursuit. And what enhances the Guilt : It

15

61)

23

62

· F

· V

t

· fi

· ti

Ger

Ch. 190 Snews Makkeed State. 195 is an Impossibility in this Case to be faithful to one Person, withour being entirely " faffe to the reft of the World. Belides. "we are convinced by perpetual Examples, that the Fornicator feldom escapes Disease, Sickness, and Misfortune. Whence come · fo many aching Bones, and fo much poi-. Toned Juices, but from this vicious Course of Tafe? Heroes of old fled from Torments, by Death; but the modern Ad-' venturer in Lust lives in Death and Torments, with a Heart wholly bent upon a ' Supply for remaining in what palls all the Comforts of Life: So that at last they are left without Hand to lift, Leg to ' move, and a Tongue that can scarce utter his Meaning. Yet whoever give themselves up wholly to Lust, will soon find it the least Fault they are guilty of: For then, tho perchance imperceptibly, · Hatred to those they have injured; mean Shifts to cover their Offences; Envy and Malice to the Innocent, and a general Sacrifice of all that is good-natured and ' praise-worthy, when it interrupts them; will possess all their Faculties, and make them utter Strangers to the noble Plea-' fures, which flow from Honour and Virtue, and Good-nature.'-The good old Gentleman was proceeding, when a Ser-K 2 vant

d

ar

)-

to

at

th

e?

res

ots,

Ian

his

the

ant, fur-

ch a

: It

196 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

vant informed them, that a Lady was below, enquiring for Mr. Jones; who, defiring his Uncle to favour him with his Company, as foon as possible, in the Parlour, defeended, and, according to Expectation, found it to be Mrs. Ifabella Armstrong; and, by the Time they reached the Parlour, Mr. Allworthy thought his immediate Prefence so necessary that he got down also.

The Lady who perceived a very confiderable Alteration in the young Gentleman's Countenance and Behaviour, fince they parted last Night; and was unexpectedly furprized by the fudden, and leemingly precipitate, Entry of the old Gentleman, with his Shoes unbuckled, and his Garters still in his Hands; readily concluded, that she was suspected, and must act upon the Referve.—Those Smiles which adorned her Face, were retracted, and replaced with an awful Severity, the Token of Resentment .- And for a while they silently gazed on each other; 'till Mr. Jones acquainted his Uncle, that the Lady waited to inform them of a Will made and left by his Mother Blifil, in the Hands of this Lady's Hufband, fince deceafed.

Ah I fays Mr. Allworthy, has the Lady my Sifter's Will? If the can prove 'it, I'll give her a proper Reward. But, · Madam, continued he, how came your · Husband to be intrusted with Mrs. Blifil's Will? To which the thus gravely " replied, Sir, at the Time Madam Bli-" fil came to refide at Salibury, my Hulband was quartered in the City. He had. ferved the King many Years, in the fame Regiment with Capt. Blifil, fo that, hearing that his Widow was in the Neighbourhood, we paid her a Visit; and from thence contracted an Intimacy, and that particular Confidence I related to ' Mr. Jones, in regard to her Will, and " first Marriage." All which she delivered with fuch an Air of Truth, as almost perfunded the old Gentleman to credit her Report. However, as nothing in this Affair could give entire Satisfaction, but a fenfible Proof of her Words, by producing the Will said to be left in her Husband's Custody, Mr. Allworthy asked if she had brought it with her; and defired to fee it. . No, fays she, I have it not with me, neither can I, at present, oblige you with a " Sight of it; for, intending to move my Lodgings to Bath, in a few Days, I have K 3

1-

e-

ce

X-

nd

old

nd

n-

ust

ich

re-

cen

fi-

mes

aitleft

this

Ahl

- + 198 The History of Tom Jones Book II.
- fent all, but what was necessary for pre-
- fent Ufe, by the Carrier, three Days ago;
- and the Will is carefully preferved a-mongst my Husband's Papers.

This Excuse was by no Means satisfactory, and as Mr. Cook, the Undertaker, had fo lately let him into Dowling's Scheme of a forged Will, he began to fear some Correspondence between him and this Widow; and interrogated her very closely con-cerning that Attorney. But as she had no other, than fuch dark Ideas of the Affair, as perspired from Mr. Allworthy's Conversation with Cook, who had told it all about the Neighbourhood, under the Seal of a profound Secret, she was not prepared to answer any one of his Questions pertinently: Yet infifted that she could produce the Will, and would in a short Time deliver it to his Order, at Bath; and fo took her Leave, which was readily granted.

Mrs. Armstrong had no sooner turned her Back, than the Hostess appeared on the Threfhold of the Door; and, dropping alow Courtfy, shewed, by the Primness of her Mouth, that her Tongue was full charged with fome important Dispatches from the Temple of Fame:

Ch. LH in bis MARRIED STATE. 100 Fame: And, Mr. Jones having accosted her with a Good-morrow, she returned it with, I am surprized, Sir, you rose so early, to entertain Bella Armstrong, who gives her Company to all the Beaus in the Town. I confess, had I been stirring, she should not have entered these Doors .- There are other Houses more proper for such Drabs to keep Appointments in. I have always kept up the amiable Character of a fober good House.—And I would not, s for all the Gold that comes from the 5 Indies, have any ill Thing reported to be done in it. I confess I was never more furprized, than to see her come out of the Parlour: And, had I found you alone with her, it would have given me much Concern; but I can't put any fuch Confitructions on a Lady's Morning Visit, s paid to two Gentlemen together. I sup-· pose she had real Business with you. - She talks much of her great Relations at · Court .- No doubt you know both them, and her, better than I .- It is no Bufiness. of mine what she did here, so long as I am fatisfied she was in good Comh pany All and and

1

e-

0;

a-

y,

a

F-

n-

ad

If-

n-

all

al

ed

ti-

0-

ne

ok

er

f-

t-

h, ne

of

e :

Mr. Jones was going to reply, but his Uncle interposed: 'Truly, said he, we K 4 'had

200 The Hiftory of Tom Jones Book II.

to had real Buliness, and Buliness of great Confequence, with the Lady; but are acquainted with meither wher Relations, "nor herfelf: And should be obliged to you for fuch Information as you can give us. For, if I take you right, the is a . Woman that lies under many bad Imputations. She is a very pretty Wo-· man.—I faw nothing in her Behaviour to be blame-worthy. But it is an Obfervation too true, that Women are too centorious of their own Sex. There ' should always be a Grain of Allowance to a fuperior Degree of Beauty.-Numberless are the Dangers to which a young · Creature, more than ordinarily fair, is s incident: And even where there is the ' greatest Stock of Virtue, Modesty, and s good Sense, it is the fad Occasion of Misfortunes, which are not to be warded off by all those Guards. I dare fay this is in some measure the Case of Mrs. · Armstrong.' · Indeed, replied the Hostes, 3 I cannot fay, but you judge right; and I must own, to judge favourably is a Christian's Part. But you know we canonot that Folks Mouths! The World will talk: But I myself never faw any Thing bad in her. And the Story goes, that she s is born of noble Blood, and was croffed INC. U.S. · in

Ch. It. in his MARRIED STATE. 201 in Love, and married a Man she did not · like, a Soldier upon a March; one she did not know; to avoid the Man whom her Father would have forced upon her, against her Will Her Father turned her out of Doors, would never fee her more; but, being a Favourite at Court, procured her Husband a Commission; and they lived very comfortably in this 'City, 'till Death took him from her, about nine Months ago; fince which Time the Beaus fwarm about her. And, how ' she lives, God knows!-I could wish she was more prudent, and that she did not make her Company fo cheap; - It is 5 no Business of mine. - I will take care that neither she, nor any such, shall lie under my Roof .- One thing is taken notice of,-That the's taken Lodgings at : the Undertaker's that buried her Hufband, and Mr. Cook bears none of the · best of Characters.'-But-

Mr. Allworthy, being thus informed of the Place of her Abode, was at no Loss to guess at her Intelligence, about Mrs. Blifil and her Will, and dismissed the Landlady to hurry Breakfast, and call the Ladies. Then applying himself to his Nephew Jones, he bid him remark what Imputations this

replied the Hollan

K 5

202 The Hiftory of Tom Jones Book II. young Widow had brought upon herfelf, even in the Mouth of a Publican, by giving too much Liberty to her Admirers, and by taking too much in her Reputa-Did not you observe, continued he, what a Gloomine's overcast her beautiful Face, that destroyed the Ornaments which Nature, Birth, and Education might have fet off to great Advantage? Where Modesty, or Innocence, is want-' ing, Beauty is always unlovely to a chaste · Eye, and Quality is contemptible: Good Breeding degenerates into Wantonness, and Wit into Impudence. There is no · Charm that can supply the Place of Innocence; and Modesty is not only an Ornament, but a Guard to Virtue; and a kind of quick and delicate Feeling in the Soul, which makes her shrink and withdraw herfelf from every thing that can endanger her Peace and Safety. An excellent Sensibility, that warns her to · shun the first Appearance of every thing that is pernicious: The certain Indication of a great and noble Mind; and it is the · Virtue which guides a Man in every honest Undertaking, makes him amiable • to his Friends, respected of his Enemies; and not only attracts Benevolence, but demands Approbation, in all Places and · on

Ch. II. in bis MARRIED STATE. 203 on all Occasions. In Fine, if Modesty be banished out of the World, she carries along with her half the Virtues of this Life, Therefore be careful to preserve this Charm: For a modest Man should preserve his Character, as a frugal Man does his Fortune. If either of them live to the Height of their Stock, the one will find Losses, the other Errors, which he has not Stock by him to make up in Time of Necessity. They who by their Words and Actions take as much upon themfelves, as they can but barely demand, in ' the strict Scrutiny of their Deserts, will find their Account lessen every Day, till, in the End, they are quite undone, in the Efteem of the Virtuous and Prudent. ' Modesty in a Woman has a certain agreeable Fear in all that she enters upon: And in Men it is composed of a right Judgment of what is proper for them todo; and confequently a discreet Man is always modest, though the Jealousy of a Wife, or the Malice of the World, bring him under ever fo many Imputations. And, by the Example just gone from us, ' you may judge it is so necessary a Quabification for Pleasing, that the loose Part of Woman-kind, whose Study is to ensnare Men's Hearts, never fail to support

204 The History of TOM JONES Book II.

port its Appearance, in their first Attacks band was esanctions. I adv char used him with Civility and

was roo farix at quit Hop l'as accepted

The Chat at Breakfast, containing Characters,

Fill at laft the poor Lady fell into luch

Breakfast, Mr. Partridge informed them that the Gentleman, who had introduced them into the Assembly, paid his Compliments, and would be glad of their Company at Breakfast. Mr. Jones in the Name of the rest returned their Compliments, and, being just sat down, desired his Company in the Parlour.

The young Gentleman came immediately; and, after the usual Ceremonies were over, enquired how they liked the Entertainment and Company, to which he had introduced them the foregoing Evening. He was proceeding,—but Mrs. Jones, interrupting him, desired to know who that fat Woman was, that sat all the Time so pensive under the Clock?—'It is, said he, the 'Wife of a worthy Clergyman in this 'Neighbourhood, whose Head-piece, pro'ving too weak for the Marriage-State,
'could

Ch. 12. in bis MARRIED STATE. 205 could not help thinking that her Hufband was enticed to do Evil, with every Lady that used him with Civility; and was too familiar with fuch, as accepted of a friendly Visit from him, tho' it was both his Interest and his Duty to give them his Company on proper Occasions. 'Till at last the poor Lady fell into such s an ill Habit of Mind, that fhe was always discontented, lost all Patience, was deaf to all Protestations, and led the good ' Man so disagreeable a Life, so ourrageous and jealous, that unable to bear the Continuance of what daily fullied his Character, and without any Prospect of her Reformation, who would neither adhere to Reafon, Advice, Interest, nor Duty, he was in the End obliged to put her away by due Course of Law, allowing her a fufficient Maintenance, according to his ' Ability; and she has the Mortification of lamenting alone her too warm Refentments, supposing all she suspected had been true; which all prudent Women ' will diffemble, if they do but confider ' that Husbands have been often reclaimed by gentle Methods, never by rough, un-· less they depend upon the Wife's Fortune, for the best Part of their own: In which Case the Man is often forced to put · up

it

1-

e

is

)-

e,

Tom Jones Book II.

Tom with many Oddities in his Wife's Temper. I hope, Ladies, as this can be intended, by no Means, a Reflection upon any present, that you will excuse what I affert upon frequent Observation.

Pray, said Mr. Jones, who was that Gentleman, who fat in an Elbow Chair close by the Music? He seemed more fit for his Chamber and Water-Gruel, than the Place and Entertainment where he was. He, fays the young Gentleman, did look indisposed at present, but certainly we have not a more gay, talkative, and indeed impertinent Member. He sometimes, when in the Humour, angles with a Strain of · Affectation for Hearts; catches at Applause; softens his Eyes and Voice, and gives Snuff to the Ladies upon his Knees, ' that by fo graceful and submissive a Turn, he may expose his Person to greater Advantage. He may not be improperly called a Male Coquet, a Fribble, whose Business has been rather to make Love than to take it; 'till of late he has been caught, and almost ruined both in his Estate and ' Constitution by an Amour he contracted with an Officer's Wife; he was too nice to divide her even with her Husband, and therefore took her to subsist upon his Fortune,

Ch. 121 in bis MARRIED STATE. 207 tune, which was foon lavished with the Prodigality of a new and true Loven. He had also a handsome Place of Profit in the Government; but, as he could spare ono Time from his fair Mistress, he neglected the Duty to be performed in that · Office; which drew upon him the Cenfure of the Board: So being fure of losing it, he took the modish Method to resign what he could no longer hold; he pretended to be difgusted, and laid down his · Post, because a Friend of his, who procured it him, was discharged from all his · Employments at Court, for being too · officious. The Officer is fince dead, and fome fay that he is now married to the Widow, who you must have taken Notice of in the Widow's Weed; tho'. if common Fame is to be credited. The has been in Search of other Adventures:

Mrs. Constantia begged also to be informed who that Gentleman was, who was observed to be more than commonly officious about a wonderful gay Lady, that was constantly humming the Airs and Tunes, as they were played. He seemed to steal her Glances, and to be upon the Reserve,

· But, I must be of Rochesoucault's Opi-

208 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

. That Gentleman, faid he, you feem to have admired, is of an ancient Family, and a confiderable Estate; but so very fond of Honour, that he exposes himself every Campaign, as a Volunteer to be shot at; the rest of his Time he devotes wholly to the Lady you observed him to admire so much. She has committed fo many Indiscretions, that her Husband has brought her down to this Neighbourhood, to avoid " the Reflections with which he was daily fatigued at Court; tho he did not give · Ear to them till fhe procured him an Heir, ' to deprive the next Successor, whom he " mortally hates; and has chosen the only · Place she could defire to be seated in for the Enjoyment of her Lover, who lives

But, Ladies, continued he, there was a Couple present in our Assembly, whose History, I believe, is more deserving of Attention, than any we have yet noted. I mean Sir Richard Strangeways and his Lady. Sir Richard was possessed of a very large Estate, and his Management had gained him great Reputation for Wisdom and Integrity. And, amongst

not far off.

his Admirers, there was a Gentleman nothing inferior in Birth, who, dying, left

to

6

59

611

. (

601

. 0

· P

· le

· C

fo F

· D

· M

th

· Vi

· Ye

or

COLF

Ch. 12. in his MARRIED STATE. 200 to his Care an only Daughter, with a Hortune of 10,000 las Sir Richard spared no Expence in the Education of his Ward, then under 100 Years, of Age, Her Name was Chariffe, and the was brought up, at his own House, amongst his Children; by which the profited very much, and was deligned as a Wife to his Son; before the Increase of his Ambition and Riches taught him other Desires. She was no Beauty, but a very agreeable Perfon, which often enchants the Men deeper than Beauty. We are often upon our Guard against the Attack of that, whilst the unwary Heart, gareless and defenceless, as dreading no Surprize, permits the Agreeable to manage as they oplease. Sir Richard must be acknow-' ledged to have shewn great Esteem for Wirtue, wherever found; but he was a "Courtier, and, some say, a Statesman; ' fo that he was obliged to maintain his ' Footing by Ambition, Defire of Gain, 5 Diffimulation, and Cunning; as the best Means to advance his Fortune: And he ' thought it enough for himself to applaud Virtue, and, in his Words, to decry Vice. 'Yet, tho' his Heart and Tongue seldom or ever agreed, he ordered young Clarissa to be educated in the high Road

t

d

y

r,

ne

ly

or

res

vas

ose

of

I

his

fa

ient

for

man

left

· to

.comemu!

210 The History of Tom Jones Book II. of Virtue, he banished from her Conversation all airy Romances, Plays, dengerous Novels, loofe and infinuating Poetry, artificial Introductions of Love, and whatever elfe was poisonous to, or would not edify, the Senses. He interdicted to her all Diversions, but such as were most innocent and simple. A folitary Walk, a folemn Tune on the Spinnet, the Reading of Books of Education and Piety, were all the Recreations this young Virgin was permitted to take, toupon a Principle, tho' I don't defend it, that, if a Lady be too early used to violent Pleasures, it debauches her Tastes for ever to any other Diversions. He taught her to beware of Hopes and Fears, never to defire any thing with too much Eagerness, and to guard herself against those dangerous Convulsions of the Mind, that upon the least Disappointment precipitate into a thousand Inconveniences. He endeavoured to root out from Nature those common Affections and Averlions, fo natural to young People, by flewing her that nothing deferves truly to be passionately loved, but Virtue; s and on the other Hand, that nothing ought to be hated, but Vice. He in particular wifely and early curbed that Pre-

" fumption,

Ch. 12. in bis MARRIED STATE. 211 fumption, which accompanies the Applause, which the World gives to a young Wit; for her bright Genius often broke our into dangerous Sparkles: And he shewed her that true Wit confifted not in much speaking, but in speaking much in a few Words; that what ever carried beyond the Knowledge of her Duty, carried her too far; and that all other Embellishments of the Mind were more dangerous than ufe-' ful, and to be avoided as her Ruin; because the Possession of them was attended by Self-love, Vanity, and Deceit, Things incompatible, and never mingled in the Character of a Woman of true · Honour. He also recommended Modesty and Silence; that the should shun all Occasions of speaking upon Subjects not o necessary to a Lady's Knowledge, tho · she could speak never so well; for, said he, 'you will then imitate Zeno, who by Silence heard other Men's Imperfections, and concealed his own: The more Wit you have, the less Occasion you have to shew it; and, if the Want of it give Difgust, too much does not generally pleafe better. And then he observed, that the Weakness of Human Nature is such, that the chief Pleasure in Conversation lies in · Speaking, not in the hearing Part, and if a ' presumptuous

e

ıt

d

e,

g

r-

en, 212 The History of TOM JONES Book II.

presumptuous Person, (tho with never so great a Capacity) pretends to usurp upon that Privilege, they look upon her as a Tyrant, that would ravish from them the Freedom of their Votes. But his ftrongest Battery was against Love, that Invader of the Heart; He shewed her how · shameful it was for a young Lady ever to think of any Tendernels for a Lover, 'till he was become her Hufband; that true Picty and Duty would instruct her, in all that was necessary for a good Wife to feel of that dangerous Passion; and that she should not so much as ever seek to know what was meant by that shameful Weakness, and the Destruction of Matrimonial Peace, called Jealoufy; because it is a painful Passion, and generally at-· tended with Slander and Hatred, two base and contemptible Qualities. He then expatiated upon that violent inborn Defire of pleasing, so natural to Ladies. He decried it as the Pest of Virtue, which it risques by a few acquired Arts and languishing Charms, to gain a little contemptible Dominion over a Heart, which may not be worth conquering. He recommended Friendship as far more noble in its Nature, and much to be preferred to Love; because a Friend loves always,

Ch. 12, in bis MARRIED STATE, 213 ways, a Lover but for a Time. And, in Fine, he taught her that Love, under the most flattering Appearances, concealed inevitable Ruin; the very first Impressions were dreadful, and to be carefully sup-' pressed : For, according to Plato, the first Step to Wisdom is not to love; the second is so to love, as not to discover it. By all which Instructions it is very evident, that Sir Richard was endeavouring to re-four this young Lady from the bad Examples of the Age, in which too many 'Wives, in a high Station of Life, neglect their Duties, disorder their Families, break their own Rest, and even forget their Hus-' bands and Children, and their Honour, for the Sake of some darling Passion, such 'as Gaming, &c. But this Education ' moulded the charming Clariffa into fo exquisite a Pattern, that Sir Richard, at ' last, fell in Love with her. But then he remembered who she was, the Daughter of his Friend: Of a Friend, who, at his Death, left the Charge of her Education 'to him; nor could he marry her, being ' under Treaty with a Lady of greater Fortune and Birth: And yet to possess her, without it, was a villainous detestable 'Thought: But not to possess her at all was Loss of Life, and Death inevitable; · In

eak

(e

t-

fe

X-

of

e-

ît

n-

n-

ch

Te

10-

re-

al-

275,

214 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

In Fine, making good the Saying, that the

Love of Beauty is the Loss of Reason, he

· looked upon the Enjoyment of the inno-

In

 T_{l}

Sa

cent Clariffa the only Means of his own

· Preservation; and thence concluding, that

e neither Religion, Honour, Gratitude, nor

Friendship are Ties sufficient to deprive

'Man of an essential Good, he resolved to

corrupt his virtuous Ward. He was refol-

ved to change her whole Form of Living,

to carry her to Court, and shew her the

World, Balls, Affemblies, Mafquerades,

Opera's, Plays, Cards, and every thing

that conduced to the Enervating of the

Mind, and Fitting it for the foft Play and

· Pression of Love; according to the Lef-

fon he had read in the Universal Passion,

where the Poet fings:

Britannia's Daughters, much more fair

Too fond of Admiration, lose their Price; Worn in the public Eye, give cheap Delight To Throngs, and tarnish to the sated Sight. As unreserv'd, and beautious as the Sun, Through every Sign of Vanity they run; Assemblies, Parks, coarse Feasts in City-Halls, Lectures and Tryals, Plays, Committees, Balls, Wells, Bedlams, Executions, Smithfield-Scenes, And Fortune-tellers-Caves, and Lions-dens, Taverns.

Ch. 12. (in bis MARRIED STATES 215)
Taverns, Exchanges, Bridewells, Drawing,
Rooms,
Inhalments, Pillories, Coronations, Tombs.

Instalments, Pillories, Coronations, Tombs, Tumblens, and Funerals, Puppet-shews, Reviews, Sales, Races - Coronations, Tombs,

, wither Religion, Honeur, Cratingde, nor But his first Step was to discharge her Tutrefs, and affure her, that for the Future, she should have no Person about herto fand in Awe of. He then had her into his 'Library, and put into her Hand Myra's Love of her Father; and bid her read that, or any other Books, to improve her 'Mind, and divert her. Which Behaviour of her Guardian, as it was more pasfionate and respectful than usual, emboldened Clariffa to affume a more haughty Air. And, before they parted, Sir Richard, taking the Advantage of her Amazement, on reading the History of Myra, disclosed his Love. But all was fo far modest, that he attempted not be-' youd her Lips and Breaft, and protested ' she should never be another's: And that he could not live without her. He bege ged her to have Pity on him, to return his Love, or else he should be the most lott, undone of all Men. Clariffa, amazed and charmed, felt all those dangerous · Perturbations of Nature, that arise from

It

t.

S.

8,

s,

216 The History of Tom Jones Book II. an amorous Constitution; with Pride and and Pleasure, she saw herself necessary for the Happiness of one, that she esteemed above all the World. She answered, with the greatest Submission and Pleasure, that she was reciprocally charmed, tho' fhe knew not how, and could wish hever to be parted from him. It is possible, could this young Lady have had Conduct and Resolution enough to push for it, she e might have now engaged Sir Richard to marry her; but fhe had no criminal Inclinations, and could not be persuaded, that he intended any other than what was honourable towards her. And being brought up under his Care, as a Child is under its Parent, the had not Courage enough to demand him for a Hulband, ' whom the had always been accustomed to flile Papa. III But in a very fhort Time, e giving Way to his Lust, he surprized her, as the lay unguarded on a Pallet Bed, to refresh herself after Dinner, in the Height of Summer. She was going to rife at his Approach, but he prevented her by flying to her Arms, and was deaf to all her Prayers and Tears. Thus was Clariffaundone! thus ruined by him that ought to have been her Protector! It was very 'long before he could appeale her: But his 'artful

6,0

e d

· fi

fa ea

pa

ev In

· ma

· fto

· Pr

and

e an

th

Ch. 12. in his MARRIED STATE. 217 artful, amorous, submissive Address, and his violent Assurances, at last obtained her · Pardon, and engaged her to submit to his future Inclinations: And she consented even to go to Town with him; and being left there for a Time, till Sir Richard returned from Flanders, where his Commission called him for the present, Clarissa contracted an intimate Friendship with a young ' lovely Widow, full of Air, Life, and Fire, ' whose Circumstances, tho' not very extraordinary, enabled her to appear very well: And she knew very well the Management of Mankind, and how to procure herself univerfal Love and Admiration. This Lady Clarissa admitted to be the unwary Confident for her Passion for Sir Richard. She imparted to her all the Letters she received ' from him, and took her Approbation for the Answer. The Widow, whose Name was Infidelia, advised her not to trust to fair Speeches and Protestations of Uneasinesses, Languors, Expectations, Impatiences, which Sir Richard expressed at every Turn in his Letters, but to push her Interest, upon his Return, that he might marry her off Hand: Advised her to be-

,

d,

O

e,

r,

d.

he

to

ed

eaf

la-

ght

ry

his

ful

marry her off Hand: Advised her to beflow no more Favours, 'till he paid her
Price; made her read the History of Rowana, who by her wise Address brought
an imperious Sultan, contrary to the esta-

an imperious Sultan, contrary to the esta-L blished 218 The Hiftory of TOM JONES Book H. blished Rules of the Seraglio, toedivide with her the Royal Throne Sir Riche and returned and proposed to take her private Lodgings, to be near him, as his Affairs obliged him to continue in Town. 'To which she consented with Joy, but afraid that he should think her Love was the Result of Interest, and believing so well of his Honour, as not to distrust his · Care of her's, she never pushed the Affair of Marriage. In this pleafing Solitude · Clariffa, having her Name changed, and · furrounded with strange Servants, enjoyed the Company of Sir Richard frequently every Day; and he even confented to let her entertain her Confident Infidelia, to · help to pass away the tedious Time of his ' Absence; but told her withal, to take care · she had not Reason at last to repent of let-' ting fuch a one into their Secret': For, if he was not mistaken in the Widow, she was not of the Number of those few Ladies that possess the retentive Faculty.

dies that possess the retentive Faculty.

He would have broken off this Correspondence with other Arguments, but

Clarissa could not evade her Destiny: No-

thing could content her in her Lover's Abfence, but the Widow Infidelia, who, be-

ing fent for, repeated her Advice to pull the Marriage; but, as Clariffa treated it

with Indifference, expressed herself fully

· fatis-

•

16,

. 6

0150

offe

1

1140

196 1

o 1

16 0

4 (

16 t

1. h

. F. O.

file

" ar

dy

the fin

of L

' qu

· H

for

William

Ch. 12. in bis MARRIED STATE. 219 fatisfied of Sir Richard's Love, Honour, and Friendship, she desisted; and tho' she difcerned, by his Delays, that he did not defign it the resolved to say no more about it, and looked upon her as a poor deceived Girl. On the contrary, Infidelia, "who had Wit enough, and a pleasant Manof relating Things, brought her all the Chit-Chat of what was doing at Court, and in the City, till at length she could perceive Sir Richard's Eyes more upon herself, than on Clariffa; that he would turn away with a gentle Sigh, when she was quick enough to catch his Eyes upon her: Which was a convincing Proof to her, how things would shortly turn. And certainly she guessed right, for he turned Glarissa away into the Country upon a trifling Pretence, fuddenly and against her Will, and no sooner saw her fairly out of his Sight, but, giving his Hand to Infidelia, led her back into the House, and ' addressed her in these Words :- ' I certainby stand condemned, Madam, by you for this Indifferency towards Clarissa; but permit me to add, that you are equally guilty. L' can perceive that you are well ac-' quainted with Life, and fully instructed how to play your own Charms upon the Hearts of your Admirers. You don't want for Wit: And, I believe, understand your Drawnus L 2 own

a-

ras

fo

his air

ade

and

yed

atly

let

, to

f his

care

f let-

or, if

The

La.

culty.

Corre-

but No-

's Ab.

o, be-

o push

ated it

f fully

fatis.

220 The History of Tom Jones Book II.

own Interest; therefore, if you have no · Aversion to my Person, 'tis in your Power to do what you please with me. You are the Cause of my sending Clariffa into the Country; because I would not disclose my Mind before so troublesome a Wite ness; who yet deserves my Esteem and · Pity, tho' I can't fay I love her. Not that I am naturally inconstant, but your sue perior Charms have imperceptibly made ' their Way. It shall be your Fault, if we are not married this very Night. As I avoid · the tedious Forms, by which our Sex think it necessary to engage yours, I beg that you will use none with me, that relate to Miss Clarissa: That is a tender Point; I would not fo much as remember, that there is fuch a Person in the World. · However I will omit nothing for her E-' stablishment in the World, as our Secret is known to none but yourfelf.'- This ' fudden Tender of the Knight put the Widow to her Reflections. It was of too great a Consequence to be slighted, and required more Decency, than to be ftruck up at once. She therefore defired, 'till the Morrow Night, to determine; when fhe hoped to have the Honour of his Company alone at Supper, Sir Richard con-· fented, and next Night, after a well ordered · Supper, Infidelia took him into a little · Drawing.

Ch. 12. in bis MARRIED STATE. 221

Drawing-Room, and told him in a few Words, she was ready to receive the Honour of what he had offered; that his Inconstancy had held her for some Moments in Suspence; but as to that she asfured herself, that religiously performing her own Duty would oblige his Honour to a Tenderness in his. That, as his Title and Fortune were fo much fuperior to her Circumstances, she would not pretend to capitulate with him, but left all her Interest in his Hands, as the best, who was so much her Friend, as to raise her to a Rank and Fortune she could not without the highest Vanity expect. Sir Richard received her Confent with great Raptures of Joy, and they were immediately married and bedded, a Licence and Parfon being prepared that very Day by him for that Purpose. And these are the two that made fo brilliant an Appearance at the Opening of the Assembly; but, if you recollect, disappeared suddenly before we retired to Cards.

e

e

d

te

;

at

d.

E

et

is

he

00

ind ick

till

nen

m

on-

red

ittle ing.

· Poor Clarissa was soon informed of this Breach of Trust and Friendship in Infidelia, and of Ingratitude and Unfaithfulness in the Knight. And the Remainder of her Days, I am told, was a continued Scene

L 3

222 The History of TOM JONES Book II.

of Horror, Sorrow, and Repentance.

"She died a true Land-mark, to warn all

"believing Virgins Trom Shipweecking

"their Honour upon that dangerous Coast

of Rocks, the Vows and pretended Paf-

feee, or to comfini Manding or to eee.

may regain their Reputations after they Here Mr. Alworthy remarked further, That the Ladies might draw another excellent /Leffon from this Hilbery and It teacheth, faid he, that no Woman ought to introduce another to the Man by whom " she is loved; if that had not happened, ' it is possible Sir Richard had not been false to Clariffa. Those dangerous Inti-' macies discover Charms, that are not ree vealed, but by Conversation. I do not · fo much condemn the Knight for casting her off, as for Debauching her; one is ' natural and but the Consequence of the other. I should apprehend, that it should ' not be the least Inducement for Ladies to · preserve their Honour, that let them be ' never fo ill used by the Person that robs ' them of it, by any Art or Pretence whatfoever; tho' the World may condemn ' and call him Villain, yet they never pity the poor Cast-away. But, why so? Because, as Modesty is the Principle, the . Foundation upon which they ought to

C ·

200

٤.

• f

• 1

. (

6710

. 1

re h

· fe

Th

Th

Dri Fan

A-v

Wh

Unf

And

build

Ch. 12 in bis MARRIED STATE. 223

build for Esteem and Admiration, they

totter, fall, and are dashed in Pieces, upon

' the stony Land of Contempt, when that

sonce violated, from whence no kind

'Hand can ever be put forth, either to re-

fcue, or to compassionate them. Men

' may regain their Reputations after they

have been Guilty of Cowardice, Robbery,

' Adultery, Bribery, and Murder, or any

Complication of Vices :- But a Woman,

who has once departed from the Road of

Virtue, is made incapable of a Return; Sor-

' row within and Scorn without overtake

her; and as I said before, the World suf-

fers her to perish loathed and unlamented.'
Therefore I will beg Leave to repeat the fol-

lowing Verses of a very excellent Poet.

The CONCLUSION.

The Mind, when turn'd a-drift, no Rules to guide,

d

0

90

05

t-

n

ty

e-

he

to

Drives at the Mercy of the Wind and Tide; Fancy and Passion toss it to and fro,

A-while torment, and then quite fink in Woe. Life swarms with Ills, the Boldest are asraid,

Where then is fafety for a tender Maid?

Unfit for Conflict, round beset with Woes, And Man, whom least she fears, her worst of Foes!

L 4

When

224 The History of ToM Jones Book II. When kind, most cruel; when obliged the most,

The least obliging, and by Favours lost.

Cruel by Nature, they for Kindness hate,

And scorn the Maid for Ills themselves

create.

If on her Fame our Sex a Blot has thrown, 'Twill ever stick, thro' Malice of her own. Most hard! in Pleasing her chief Glory lies; And yet from Pleasing her chief Dangers rise. Then please the Best; and know, for Men of Sense,

Your strongest Charms are native Innocence.

Arts on the Mind, like Paint upon the Face,
Fright him, that's worth your Love, from
your Embrace.

In fimple Manners all the Secret lies;
Be kind and virtuous, you'll be bless'd and
wife.

Vain Shew and Noise intoxicate the Brain, Begin with Giddiness, and end in Pain. Affect not empty Fame, and idle Praise, Which all those—betrays. The Sex's Glory is to shine unknown, Of all Applause be fondest of your own. Beware the Fever of the Mind! that Thirst With which this Age is eminently curst. To drink of Pleasure but inslames Desire, And Abstinence alone can quench the Fire.

hol move to T. H. Empired had an i

HISTORY

AVOIDS END TO A A OF

TOM JONES

THE

FOUNDLING,

INHIS

MARRIED STATE.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

Containing Reflections on Drunkenness.

E are now expecting Mr. Jones and his Bride's Arrival at Squire Weftern's Seat; and to hear of the Manner they are received and entertained by

226 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

by him, and congratulated by the Gentry in the Neighbourhood: Which, from the Character already given of that Country Squire, and the too common Vice of Drinking, with which the Country Gentlemen indulge themselves, and in which they seem to place the Index of their Friendship and Regard to the Person they can make drunk, upon a Visit, I apprehend will make it very seasonable here to open the Scene of this Book with the following Resections.

and look upon it to be

Nothing is so desireable as Health; and nothing can preserve it so well as Temperance in Eating and Drinking. But I cannot pretend to lay down any determinate Rules for Temperance; because what is Luxury in one, may be no Excess in another. One Person shall drink his Bottle, with less Damage to his Constitution, than another, his Pint. Every one's own Experience will teach us what Proportions of Food and Liquor do best agree with us. But in the Choice of them, as of our Companions also, let us preser that, which contributes most to Chearfulness and Refreshment,

At Meals, where the Bottle is plied without being called for; where Humour takes

College Ren Planta

ry ing

Cumu fro for wa W pro Ch M: fro is f the we

all to ap He

go

and

takes Place of Appetite; and the good Companions are too dull or too merry to know any Enjoyment in their Senses; such Pleasure is low and absurd. The Eaters sacrifice all their Senses and Understanding to their Appetite; and the Drinkers hurry themselves out of both, without pleaseing any Appetite at all.

It is true, that Drinking is supported by Custom; but they that judge seriously, must look upon it to be a very bad Custom, from which Debauch it is very common for Events to arife, which are fatal, and always fuch are difagreeable to Company. While any Person continues under this Oppression of Drink, he is divested of the Character of a Friend, a Gentleman, a Master, a Subject, and banisheth himself from all that is dear, and gives up all that is facred to him. But when we look further into the Consequences of Drunkenness, we must acknowledge, that, let a man be ever fo well endowed with Reafon and good Sense, he is not only expelled out of all the Relations of Life, but is also liable to offend against them all: His Tongue is apt to utter Things out of meer Gaiety of Heart, which may displease his best Friends, and give his Enemies a real Advantage o-L 6 ver

228 The History of TOM JONE'S Book III.

ver him: A fober Man, by the Strength of Reason, may subdue Vice and Folly: But strong Drink makes every hidden Seed sprout up in the Soul and shew itself: It gives Fury to the Passions, and Force to those Objects that are apt to produce them: It heightens Indifference into Love; Love into Jealoufy; and Jealoufy into Madness: It turns the good-natured Man into an Ideot, and the choleric into an Assassin: It adds Bitterness to Resentment: It makes Vanity unsupportable, and displays every little Spot of the Soul in its utmost Deformity, with the greatest Confusion .- It has also a bad Influence on the Mind of the Person, that is devoted to it, even in their fober Moments:—It infenfibly weakens the Understanding, impairs the Memory, and makes those Faults habitual, which are produced by frequent Excesses. Therefore, no Words can express the Terror and Detestation we should have of such a Condition, which makes us Slaves to ourselves, and, of all vicious Persons, the most vicious.

Drunkards think themselves welcome but by Halves, that are not quite drowned in a Barrel, and ill used till their Bodies are turned into Hogsheads, and their Heads into int ve un

G m by ga

ın

m hu th fr

ti an P

V

t I

>] l

Ch. I. in bis MARRIED STATE. 229

into Windmills. And they pretend to cover the Mischief and Iniquity of this Vice, under the specious and desireable Name of Goodfellowship and Breeding. Caution may be overfeen, and Sobriety trapanned by Company into Intemperance. But to gauge Breeding by the Barrel, to turn Drinking into an Employment, and the Infamy of Drunkenness into a Perfection of human Nature, is very extraordinary. For this is perfuading us to refcue our Honour from the Imputation of a pretended Vice by committing a real one. This is provoking us, by the Motives of Glory, to Actions that degrade a good Man, and force an ill one even to blush. This is misapplying the Notions of Honour and Infamy, and pronouncing the Blemishes of Mankind to make up its Beauties. Must a Gentleman lie under the Aspersion of being a bad Neighbour, or ill-bred, who refuses to drown himself or his Guest in Claret. Red-Port, or Nappy-Ale? Is not the Remedy ten Times worse than the Disease? It is much better to be upbraided for Sobriety, than to be condemned justly for Drunkenness, which throws us out of our Species, and turns us into Beafts. For an Example of which, we need look no farther than Squire Western's, where, in the Space

230 The History of Tom Jon Es Book III. Space of an Hour, a Dozen Gentlemen commenced Beafts, and all of different Sorts; there were Apes, Bears, Lions, and Fackcalls: Some roared, others yelped, and others bowled. In one Corner there was a Quarrel hatching; in another there was making of Love: Here they fung; there they blafphemed: They kiffed in one Place, and boxed in another: In fine, there was a Medley of Farce and Tragedy, of Folly and Madness; a Subject for Laughter and Tears. But, when they began to return Home, they played all at Crofs-questions; the Postilion crept behind the Coach, the Coachman into it, and the Mafter upon the Box. Thus Wine is a Leveller: It either raises the Man to the Master, or throws down the Master to the Man. So true it is here demonstrated, That, when Reason fleeps, Extravagance breaks loofe: Quality and Peafantry pig together: And there is no Difference between the Lord and his Footman.

ta

lo

to

de

ne

pi L

tio

fh

str Be

his

No one should persuade us, therefore, that the Laws of Breeding or Good-sellow-ship command us to drink away our Health and our Wits for a Frolick. Health is no Nusance, nor is Reason a Burden. If one in the Company has a Desire for a Cup of Poison,

. Ch. 1. in bis MARRIED STATE. 231

Poison, Does Custom or Breeding, or the Ceremony of Good-fellowship, order the rest to pledge him in the same deadly Liquor? Yet Excess in Drinking turns the best Ale and Wine, &c. in the Nation, into Poison: for though they do not dispatch by sudden Assault, as Ratsbane or Arsenic, but by Mine and Siege, their Operation is fure, and their Malignity is mortal.

a; Michiery of Farce and Tragedy: of Roll

The most conspicuous, however, that destroy themselves this Way, are such, as, in their Youth, fall into this Sort of Debauchery through bad Example, or mistaken Principles, to revive their Spirits lowered by some other Excess. These take to Tippling, as often as they fall into Company in the Day, and, concluding with down right Drunkenness in the Evening, never know the Satisfaction of Youth, but skip the Years of Manhood, and are decrepid soon after they are of Age according to Law.

Nor can it ever enter the Mind of a rational Man, that any Principle of Friendship shall oblige him to help a Man to destroy his Estate, to sink his Family into Beggary, his Person into Contempt, and his Body into Diseases; to dose his Reason,

and

232 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

and to stab both his, and our own Souls. Certainly, no Man dares own this for Kindness, who is not already actually drunk. Besides, we may as well entertain Heat with Cold, as Friendship with Drinking.— When Wine slies into the Head, Bottles and Glasses frequently sly about the Ears.— When once Reason is drowned, Passion always swims on the Surface.— Most Quarrels, that end in Bloodshed, begin in Wine.

Besides, Drunkenness is a Sin of a very black Dye: It is one of those that shuts Heaven's Gate, and opens that of Hell to the Offender. So that could it be proved to be as genteel, as it is clownish, that very Confideration should fright those from its Practice, who do not terminate their Hope or Fear with Sight and Sense .- Kindness and Goodfellowship must not take Place of our eternal Welfare; nor Ceremony of our Duty. And if Drunkenness be fo grievous a Sin; Is it none to be acceffory to it? To invite or persuade any one to it? Or, must a Gentleman be marked with Infamy, because he will not turn himself into a Brute, nor stoop to the Office of a Tempter? He fet us a good Example, who faid, 'In my House Guests ' shall never be stinted, nor forced. I leave ' them

A te

widi we

an in m

A

Sa to fy

tio

the

mi

Ca

them to their own Discretion, and invite them to be merry, but not to be mad.' And, in fine, were every Stranger permitted either to fill his Glass according to his own Inclination; or to make his Retreat, when he finds he has been sufficiently obedient to that of others; our Entertainments would be governed with more good Sense; and, consequently, with more good Breeding than at present is to be found even amongst those, that pretend most to it.

CHAP. II.

A Journal of Occurrences between Salisbury and Squire Western's Seat in Somersetshire.

n

r

e

e

y -

'n

<-

ts

re

n

A BOUT Ten o'Clock, the Weather favouring, they took their Leave of Salisbury, and after Baiting at Wilton House, to view that noble Structure, and to satisfy Curiosity with the Antiquities, Decorations, and Furniture therein, they pursued the Road to Wells.

Wilton-House cannot be too much admired. The River Willy, in the Front of this Palace, forms itself into an inimitable Canal parallel with the Road. And a noble Alexandrian Column of Porphyry, curiously

riously wrought, 32 Feet high, with amarable Venus at the Top, represents itself first to the greedy Spectator, not his very Entrance into the Court-yard. his will as a carbon of the Product of the Court-yard.

·CI

Fa

an

as Pe

A

fil

to

tl

In one of the first Rooms, is an admira ble Piece of Christ washing the Feet of his Disciples. At the Foot of the great Staircase, stands a Bacchus, as large as the Life, carrying a young Bacchus on his Arm, earing a Bunch of Grapes, with a chearful Countenance, exquisitely carved in fine Pelopounesian Marble. The Works of the greatest Masters cover the Walls of this great geometrical Stair-case, which was the first of its Kind in England; but these Paintings are only to be accounted as an Introduction to what is beyond them. The grand Apartment is one of the noblest Pieces of Architecture: The Salon is 60 Feet long, 30 high, and 30 broad: And fuch Variety strikes the Eye on every Side, that it puzzles the transient Visitor which Way to turn for the most delightful Entertainment. On this Side, he meets with a Chain of Rooms filled with Paintings, fo curious and various, as to invite his longer Continuance; and the Greek and Roman Antiquities, which fill the other Apartments, call off the Attention to admire their Beauty. In one End ribunation.

End of the grand Room, is the celebrated Family-picture by Vandyke, 20 Feet long, and 12 high containing 12 Figures as big as Life, which appear to be so many real Persons, rather than the Production of Art: And all the other Pictures there are by the fame incomparable Hand. And from this fine Range of Beauties the giddy Spectators passes into three or four Rooms upon the same Floor filled with Wonders Nothing can exceed the Workmanship of the marble Chimney-pieces, all carved in Italy: Statues of different Sorts, Baffo-relievo's, and Pictures of the most famous Masters, fill most of the Apartments. The Collection of Head-pieces, Coats of Mail, and other Armour for both Horse and Men, are also a Curiofity; amongst which are shewn those of Henry VIII, Edward VI, and of the Earl of Pembroke, nick-named Black Tack, very curious and emboffed. The Loggio in the Bowling-green, whose Pillars are beautifully rusticated, and inriched with Niches and Statues: The Grotto, whose Front is curiously carved without, and lined with Marble, supported with black Ionic Pillars, with Capitals of white Marble, and four fine Basso-relievo's from Florence: The very Stables and other Offices, are all Beauties in their Kind, which would tire Defcription;

236 The History of TOM JONES Book III. Scription; not to mention the Garden-front 194 Feet long, and justly esteemed one of the best Pieces of the renowned Inigo Jones.

From this most pleasant and delightful Palace, Mr. Allworthy ordered the Coachman to refume his Course, and make the best of his Way to-, where they intended to dine. Here they met with a Gentleman in his Way to Bath; having strolled a little out of the London Road to visit Glastenbury, and regale himself with the Air and Curiofities both in Art and Nature within the Verge of Salisbury-Plane. His Address presently recommended him to the Esquire, and gained him Admission into his Company at Dinner. The Stranger was foon discovered to be a Clergyman of a fmall temporal Estate, and a Batchelor, who had for many Years expected the Favours of the Great, and spent both his Money and Health, as well as his Time, in Pursuit of some Ecclesiastical Preferment, to which he, at last, was convinced, that his Learning and Sincerity were unfurmountable Obstacles, and had therefore refolved to retire, and spend the rest of his Days in Solitude, and the Enquiry into the natural Advantages, Curiofities, and Manufactures of his native Country; having,

in

in

gr

th

W

th

Ch. 2. in his MARRIED STATE. 237 in his younger Years, travelled over the greatest Part of Europe, and peeped into the Beauties of the East.

Mr. Allworthy understanding, also, that he was lately come from Court, enquired, What News? Mr. Leonard, for that was the Clergyman's Name, replied, ' That there was nothing new from Abroad: And that the Report of an approaching Peace was confirmed, by the Arrival of an Agent from S-n, and another from F-ce. To which, he added, I believe his Majesty, for the Good of his Subjects, is not averse: Who, could he judge all Things with ' his own Eyes and Ears, would certainly direct them with Impartiality and Justice. But, alas! what Defence is there against the Corruption of Favourites, and the By-interests of Ministers? It is too com-' mon to hear the Vulgar rave against the ' King for the Grievances brought upon the Nation: Yet we know it is wrong to charge Majesty, in the Gross, with such 'Imputations. 'Tis impossible a Prince can come to the Knowledge of Things but by Representation; and they are always represented according to the Sense of the Representer, who may be prompted ed

0

t

•

238 The History of Tom Jon Es Book III.

ed to by Avarice, Hatred, a Defire of

Revenge, Pride, Ambition, or Favour:
Nor is it possible to avoid it. For, if the

Prince be like him upon the Throne, a

s good Man, he is far from suspecting the

Veracity of those who never shew him a-

' ny but their fair Side. He cannot dive into

the Heart of Man: He must trust to Ap-

· pearances; and yet there are but few ho-

e nest Men about the Persons of Princes.

· None serve at Court, but with a Prospect

· of making, advancing, or preferving their

· Fortune at the Expence of their Sinceri-

ty. For which End, I have observed

that the Atheist, persuaded of the Amia-

bleness of Religion and Virtue, affects Pi-

ety; the Debauchee becomes regular;

the Covetous and Revengeful grow ge-

' nerous and calm; the most Choleric trims

his Mouth and Cheeks with Smiles There

his Mouth and Cheeks with Smiles. There-

fore, till there can be found upright Mi-

' nisters, and disinterested Favourites, it

is no Wonder a Prince should be deceived

by Mifrepresentations: Nor can he be

blamed for being deceived by them; any

more than another Man; nor, indeed,

fo much, as there is greater Art made

Use of to betray his Interest.' And—

The talk out folders from Mr.

Si

ed

pa

gr

Ch. 2 th bis MARRIED STATE. 239

Mr. Allworthy, interrupting him, faid, Sir, I perceive you have been well acquainted at Court. Pray oblige us with an impartial Description of those that bear the greatest Sway in it. Truly, Sir, replied Mr. Leonard, according to the best Obfervations I have been able to make, I will describe them to you in an Allegory. "Upon extraordinary Occasions, such as at Councils, Audiences, Times of great Festivals, Collar-days, you would think that Religion was the Basis, and Virtue · the Guide of every Action. This beautiful Appearance, adorned with every ' Thing that is splendid and ravishing, en-· gages the Attention of the Public, and deceives the Ignorant with the Assistance of Artifice and Flattery under the Direc-' tion of Hypocrify, who keeps all under her Charge in exact Decorum, after Virtue and Religion are locked up in her own Apartment, which is never oe pened, but to strengthen the Interest of Deceit. The reigning Favourite is the God of Riches set upon a shining ' Altar within an Alcove, to which the whole Tribe of Courtiers and their · Followers pay their eternal Homage; kneeling upon the Steps, which are · fupported with the genuine Figures of

Corrup-

S

d

e

240 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

6-1

4

· }

• {

· t

.

6 t

· a

t a

·I

. C

4 7

. (

6 b

. C

0

· P

· th

· th

· R

· ti

0

· Corruption and Bribery, adorned with Jewels, Purses of Gold, Bank-bills, and ' India Stock, And behind, at a little Diftance, you may behold a long Train of Merchants, Contractors, and Artificers, with Bills in one Hand, and Rewards in the other, to pay for the Signing and Dispatch of those Bills. On each Side of the Altar lie Heaps of Petitions for Employments and Commissions, with their Bribes, disposed in very regular and decent Order: For not any one is found · fo weak as to pretend to Preferment without a valuable Consideration: A Vice become so modish, that a late R-t Rev. • P——e of L—— could not be made ' fensible by a D—cr—e in C—y, that a · poor Curate in his Diocese was intitled to Mr. P-t-re's Annuity for unbeneficed ' Curates, till his Secretary P- had ' squeezed 20 % out of him, besides two · Years Sollicitation, Expences, and Loss of Time.

I might now lead you to the CouncilBoard and the Senate-House: But I doubt
not of your Knowledge of every Thing
that has happened there, and of their
Foundation, Institution, real and prefent Interests; and the Reasons why a
Seat

Ch. 2. in bis MARRIED STATE. 241

Seat or Place of no apparent Profit should

have fo much Money expended at an E-

· lection in the Pursuit of it .- Ladies, I

beg your Pardon :- But is it not very

grotesque to see a young Beau, rising hot

from the Embraces of a Venus, kiffing all

the old Women in a Country Borough, by

way of Introduction for the Acceptance

of a more substantial Token, to be paid

to some Relation for their Vote!

f

r

d

-

7.

le

a

to

d

ad

VO

os

il

bt

ng

eir

re-

eat

" I could also inform you of the Arsenal, and Stores, and the whole Management of those that preside over the Marine Assairs; and point out the Abuses and unheeded Detection thereof; and from thence conduct you to the Army, into the very 'Tents, and report to you how much the General has done, and how much might · be done: Shew you the Interests and In-' clination of the Officer, the Wretchedness of the Soldier, and the Debauchery of the 'Whole; their incessant Endeavours to ' prolong the War; their Arts to prevent or retard a Peace, because it must level ' the Power of some, and annihilate the ex-' orbitant Expence of the Whole: But ' these Things are too public to want my ' Remonstrance, would Time and your Patience permit me to enter into a parti242 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

CI

tei

• 1

• 1

· f

6

. (

e t

· n

· t

· n

c t

i th

6 O

· T

. 01

· ha

· fo

· no

W W

" th

· a

ha ha

cular Detail of them; which at Present

e puts us in Mind to continue our respec-

' tive Journies.—Conversation sweetly be-

erfon to be carried out to execution to execution to be carried out to execution to be carried out to execution to exec

The Ladies, who had withdrawn a while, returned with Information that the Coach waited. Mr. Allworthy gave this agreeable Stranger an Invitation to his House, should it fuit him to visit that Part of Somersetshire; and taking his Leave proceeded, till Night overtook 'em. Cinthia mounted her Car, and took the Reins of Night to administer to the World in the Absence of her Brother, before they arrived at Wells; and in the Morning the Hostess informed the Ladies that the whole City were stirring, and expecting the Time of leading a Criminal from the Prison to Execution; and defired their Company to see the same from her Balcony. Mrs. Jones, whose tender Compaffion entered fo deep as to shew an extreme Fondness for a little Bird, (See Vol. I. Book iv. c. 3.) thanked her for her Compliment; and could not refrain from blaming the Fierceness of their Nature, who took Pleafure in such terrible Objects. What barbarous Soul, fays she, can find Diversion in fuch a Prospect? However, we shall go presently to Breakfast, and then it may oblige us all to unriddle to us the Cause of this Execution. Being Detail of them a winch at Prefe

Being set to Breakfast, the Landlady entertained her Guest's with the History of the Person to be carried out to Execution: 'She is a young Woman of a good Family, not many Miles off, who fell in Love with a · Soldier quartered near her Father's House, and permitted him to abuse her. marry! these Zoldiers are the perfect ' Bane of all Country-Gentlewomen : their fine Words and their fine Cloaths bear down all before um: they never go to ' Church nor Meeting to pray to God; not they zure; that's the least of their Busie ness: they mind Ogling (as they call it) the Madams, instead of minding the Minister. Their first Enquiry, after the · Quarters are fettled, is to get a List of all the Volks in the Parish, and then to Work they go; they shave, they powder, and on goes the Blue or the Scarlet every Day. They squander away a Month's Pay in one Night at Balls and Cards, when they ' had much better be in their Beds, and forecasting how to pay their Debts: But on Matter for that, we, that are plagued ' with 'um, know that they never trouble ' their Heads about it. Ads me! if I was ' a Gentlewoman's Father, or Mother, and ' had Daughters, they should as soon eat M 2

r

1-

1-

n

0

0-

is

g

244 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

the Fire as come near one of those Red-Coats. They can all right for footh; wanton Ditties is wall they mind and a great many of em can toot, toot, toot, it upon a Pipe; they have another Name for it, but the Thing is the fame, and ' you know my Meaning; and this ravishes the young Gentlewoman's Ears. Then they can con over Plays, and make dying · Love Speeches, that poison young Hearts, and cut fuch Capers as diffract the defpairing Maidens. This, with a great · Stock of Impudence and Inhumanity, is their whole Estate. For had you the · Opportunity to look into their Portmanteaus, as I often have, there's nothing better, except their Regimentals, in 'um, than a dirty Morning Gown; two or three pair of Sleeves; four old Shirts at the · most; and as many Neck-cloths or Stocks. · Fine they must be, forfooth, but worn, with often Washing, as thin as a Cobweb; for, fall out what will, they must have a clean Shirt every Day. Then they kiss and compliment our Country-Milliners to trust 'um with Sword-Knots, clean · Gloves, &c. and thus equipped they fingle out some Fortune to their Fancy, and

' never will be denied.

Coor Gentleward

· Now

6 8

i

6 c

· i

, o

· 10

0

ri

· m

· le

· t

· 17

is

a

g

. CC

6 h

· V

af

m

onf

d

n

g

S,

e-

at

is

he

n-

t-

m,

10

the

ks.

rn,

eb;

ea

kils

ers

ean

igle

and

low

the life as come near one of those Redu Now the poor miserable Creature that's going to be hanged was a young Gentlewoman of 5000l Fortune. Her Mother, in God's Mercy, was dead before this Misfortune came to the Family. She could read Romances (Romances I think you call 'um) and Plays, and was allowed to be as notable a Wit as any one's Child in a great Way of hur, let the other be who she would. But hur Vather was an old Curmudgeonly Cur, and would never let her zee the World, nor give hur any of hur Portion 'till he died, or she married to his Liking; but yet he ne'er looked out for a Husband for hur. Whereas ' my Mind gives me, that if he had but · let hur go into fine Company (as other brave Ladies do) she would not have thought a ranting Officer fuch a God-amighty. The young Squire, hur Brother, is as complete a Man (tho' I fay it) as any the Sun e'er shone upon. But he was gone beyond Zeas to learn their Linguo, ' when this Rogue of a red and blue Coat courted her, or else he had never got his Will of her: he would 'ave watched his Vaters for him to zome Purpose: he's ' afraid of ne'er an Officer of 'um all. But ' more's the Pity, poor Gentlewoman, it M 3

246 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

was not hur good Luck. The Rogue would not marry hur; because he knew hur Vather would not give hur a Groat with him : but he spoke hur so fair, that she had him let in at Nights at the back Gate in the Garden, and carried up to the Chamber. I knew all the Intrigue (poor Soul!) you could not have lit upon one that could tell you better. He fo bepraised hur, and inveigled hur, that the fhort and the long on't is, in down-' right Terms, he robbed hur of hur Maidenhead, and left hur nothing for it but a big Belly. However, the being zuch a · vast Gentleman's Daughter, this passed on, and no body thought any zuch Thing of hur, at last our Officer wanted to be gone, and go he did. The Company marched away; but left, it is not known, how many unborn Bastards behind them .- A fine · Charge for us poor House-keepers, that pay Taxes; when they come upon the Parish, to be maintained! I heard my · Husband say, it will half beggar honest · Volks—But Joy go with 'um: I'll pay for their Bastards with all my Heart, so they do never come again .- For, from the highest to the lowest, a young Girl could not go about her Business, they would so kiss and tease her .- I, for zure, 6 this

Ch. 2. in bis MARRIED STATE. 247 this poor unfortunate Lady cried hur Belly-full, when her loufy Cockade Fellow marched off with Beat of Drum! Tho' I know no more than as I guess; only this I know that the Squire arrived from his Travels, just as she was at hur Time. · He was hugely fond of his Sifter; she fell into Labour, when he was in the Room with hur, but had provided no versal Thing for the Child. She told · her Brother, that the was tormented with the Tooth-ach, and wanted to go to Bed. His Chamber was next to hur's: away he went, and to it she goes: a woeful Scene! Pain after Pain: Tear after Tear: Cry after Cry. Her Brother wondered what was the Matter: knocked ' twice at the Door; but she pretending to be in hur Shift, and mad with the · Tooth-ach, refused to let him in. He · might have fet all Night: He is good Nature; and would certainly have forgiven hur, covered hur Shame, and taken · Care of the Infant. But hur Fortune was to be hanged. - Well, to Bed she goes, ' and, after a few more Labour Pains, she is delivered alone by hurself of a brave Boy. But, lest he should cry, she tore out his Bowels in the Birth, 'Twas the Lord's · Mercy she did not murder hurself by it. M 4.

e

e

0

1:

7 -

1

2

2

n,

ed

ny

ne

he:

ny

eft

fo

om Girl

hey

ire,

248 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

But zuch ave best Luck. An honest

Woman can scarce be brought to Bed

without a Midwife Well, up the wraps

Child and Bowels, and all together, in one

of her Gowns, and to Bed the goes. In

the Morning she rings for Abigail, her

Chamber-maid, and complained of a vi-

olent Fit of the Vapours; orders hur to

bring hur a little Plague-Water, and, after

a great many Good-morrows and round

about Stories, makes Abigail a Present of

an old Gown and Petticoat, and then

after bidding hur swear for to be true,

s and not tell what she was going to trust

hur with, told hur all about it, only con-

cealing hur Part of the Murder; and

begged hur to carry the Corps, and lay

it in an old useless Leaden-Gutter at the

· Top of the House, till she should be able

to dig a Grave for it; for Abigail said,

· she durst not do it alone.

'The Maid with much Fear and Trembling did as she was directed: but in two

or three Days was pricked in Conscience,

or, it may be, like a right Chamber-maid,

· Abigail, not able to contain the Secret any

' longer, opened the whole Affair to Doll

the Dairy-maid, hur Bedfellow. And af-

ter this they both fancied that, when they

· were

Ch. 2. in bis MARRIED STATE. 249 were a Bed at Nights, a cold little Hand ftroked um over their Faces; and fo corrupted one another with these Figuaries, that at last they believed, nay, and fwore to it, that the Child walked; who, · if it had been alive, we all know, could onot yet have stood. Well, but this Infant-Ghost frighted 'um out of their Wits: vet the Girls loved their Mistress so much, that, as they had no Suspicion of Murder, they resolved not to disgrace hur. But Doll having a Sweet-Heart, one Tonfor, as honest a Barber as ever lived, she opened · hur Mind to him, who presently smelt a Rat, and takes the first Opportunity to · lodge an Information against the young · Lady, according to the Account he had received from Doll. The Magistrate, before whom Tonfor gave the Information, · hated the young Lady's Father mortally; granted a Warrant, searched the House, and found the Child; she was secured. e tried for hur Life, condemned for wilful · Murder, and is now going to Execution. · I wish she may be reprieved, I mean par-' doned; and the Rogue that deceived hur be hanged.—She was a handsome Gentlewoman, and I wish all young Women e may take Warning by hur Misfortune! The Landlady having done, she received. M 5

S

r

the Thanks of the Company and retired.

And the Dread of falling in with the Executioners made em order the Coach with the utmost Expedition: so that they

left Wells by Nine o'Clock. Tions trays

M. A. W. Superior of the Charge

What passed after the Leaving of the City of Wells, with Reflections on the foregoing Chapter.

X7 HEN Mr. Allworthy found 'emselves quite clear of the Multitude, and the Noise of the Town, he began with fome Reflections on the fad Subject above recited: 'I am tenderly touched, faid he, at the Mifortune of this young unhappy Gentlewoman. Her Fault certainly can admit of no Excuse: it ought to be detefted and avoided. But does it not feverely retort itself upon her Parents, who gave her so careless an Education. Young ' Maids of Fashion cannot be watched with ' too much Delicacy: their Complexions and · Constitutions ought to be considered : the o more Amorous should be denied all Heightenings of the Passions; I would exclude from their Closets all Opera's, luscious Romances, and Books of Love; and I

would

Ch. 3. in bis MARRIED STATE. 251

would interdict all endearing Intimacies

· and private Conversations with the nearest

Relations; left the Sex prevails, and too

· much Leifure gives 'em Opportunity to

exert their Temper. Not that I would

· advise an involuntary Celibacy: for where

there appears a natural amorous Impa-

tience, I would propose an early Marriage

as the best and most effectual Cure. Again,

' I have often remarked that an unwary

· Virgin is betrayed and fold by the Neces-

' sities of those about her: or her Tem-

' per is foured, and turned averse by the

· crabbed, disobliging, ill-timed Severity of

' an undiffinguished Governess, who is so

' ignorant to believe that the ALL of Edu-

e cation confifts in outward Behaviour, and

a modish Carriage of the Person; whilst

the much more noble Part, the unculti-

' vated Mind, remains forgotten, or ne-

glected.

About Two o'Clock the same Day they arrived and dined at my Lord B-n's, where Mr. Allworthy and Nephew Jones and his Lady took their Leave of Madams Constantia and Teresa: and in about two Hours after were met on the Road by Squire Western and a numerous Retinue of Country Gentlemen and Farmers in that Neigh-

M 6

252 The History of Tom Jones Book IM.

News of Mr. Jones's good Fortune. The whole Country through which they passed seemed to keep Holiday; and the new married Couple were conducted Home through the constant Acclamations and Prayers of the inferior People for their long Life and Prosperity, whose natural Dispositions to do Good had so early distinguished themselves on all Occasions.

Friendinip are none to him. I have in The Gentlemen, having paid their Compliments to Mr. Jones and his Lady, ranged themselves in Order, and rid before the Coach: upon which Mr. Allworthy, observing his Neighbour Shipton amongst the foremost of them, bid his Nephew take particular Care to have no Conversation, or at least no Familiarities with him: ' For, fays he, who ever would draw a true Resemblance of this Gentleman, ought to have more Skill in Painting than I have, his · Person excepted: there it is easy to re-' present him; but his Mind is a Complication of feeming Good and real Evil, and ' impenetrable. He lends the Clew to ' none: there is no fearthing the Recesses of

his Breast. He is extremely covetous;

and so jealous, that he imagines all the World has Designs upon him; and, even when

Ch. 3. in bis MARRIED STATE. 252 when he receives good Offices, he knows onot how to think they are done him: · Animated by Self-Interest only, he be-· lieves it the leading Principle of Mankind. He suspects, he doubts, he objects, and he does all Things necessary to befpeak his Diffidence; and, refolving never to be deceived, he never trufts. I am much furprized to fee him upon this Occasion, for I am certain that the Joys of · Friendship are none to him. I have indeed heard him talk of it, as a nice Piece of Speculation; but he looks upon it as a mere Fiction of the Poets, a Dream, an · idle Rapture, a Heaven in Imagination, and nothing more: yet he affects a Man-· ner so sincere and open in Appearance, that the most wary are deceived by him: they believe, he may be a Friend, till, by " melancholy Proof convinced, they are forced to acknowledge that he is unfathomable, ungrateful, and jealous aboveall Comprehension. This unhappy suspi-' cious Temper, joined to the greatest Self-Interest, that ever Man was Master of, has made him wicked, and put him upon adopting into his Thoughts and Discourse those Opinions, which destroy all Religion and Virtue, and · conclude

conclude this World to be the ALL of Life we ever are to enjoy. By which Arguments he tries to fortify himself in Misself, and would persuade himself to pursue the Dictates of Nature, without Fear of God or Man. Thus, tho' he sometimes boasts of his Learning, and studious Reading of the ancient Philosophers, I am well assured his Object is not to acquire Knowledge, and to imitate Virtue, but a Desire to set his Conscience at Rest, as to what Latitude he

may venture to give his Passions. And, confirmed in Ill, he hesitates at nothing

that may advance his Interest or his Pleasures; yet are his Pleasures always

fubservient to his Interest, and the Delight he takes in Money. His Conver-

fation is foft and obliging, till his Designs

have taken Effect; then no body can be more politive, arbitrary, and splenetic to

those over whom he has an Ascendant.

In short, he has two Manners so wonderful-

ly different, that, in being thoroughly ac-

quainted with him, you are acquainted with two Persons of as opposite Tempers,

as possible. And therefore I require a Pro-

· mise from you never to admit him to

' your Friendship, and to pay him no fur-

c ther

Ch. 4. in bis MARRIED STATE. 255

- ther Regard than as Civility obliges you
- to every Stranger in their Degree of

onenes he trees to fortify himself ishill

e perfue the vi) care A off Sure, without

hief, and would perfuade himfulf to

A few remarkable Characters, and useful Hints to the Beau-monde.

THE whole Country rung with the Arrival of the new married Couple: and the Acquaintance of both Families strove to distinguish themselves by their complimental Visits. In this promiscuous Concourse of Gentlemen and Ladies, the curious Spectator had enough to employ his Observation, both in regard to Dress and Behavisour.

The very Occasion inspired all the Youngsters with a Desire to captivate some Heart,
and the Seniors affected the Air of what
they had been, on the like Occasions.
Many of whom, sensible of the great Decay
of Nature, endeavoured to supply the
Want of Fire within by gawdy Cloaths, that
best suited a recruiting Officer or a Buskin
Prince and Princess, without restecting that
a modest and prudent Person will never
attempt

256 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

in w

in

gu

n

attempt to catch the Sight with any Care of Drefs; the outward Garb is but the Emblem of the Mind, genteel, plain, unaffected; we know that Gold and Embroidery can add nothing to the Opinion, which our Merit deserves, and that we give a Lustre to the plainest Dress; whilst it is impossible the richest should communicate any to our Person or Behaviour. Old Age adorned with sweetness of Temper, and a Gravity in Dress, and refraining from ludicrous and luscious Jests and Speeches, will always demand Respect from the younger Branches, and recommend us to the discreet Part of Mankind: for, tho' such a one is not the gayest, he is still the principal Figure in an Assembly: he first engages our Eye, as if there were fome Point of Light, which shone stronger upon him, than on any other Person in his Presence. But little Follies in Drefs (which were very conspicuous on this Occasion) lead to greater Evils; and the bearing to be laughed at, for fuch Singularities, teacheth us infenfibly an impertinent Fortitude, and enables us to bear public Censure for Things, which are beneath our Station and Years to be guilty of; which discredit our Virtues and Capacities, and unqualify us from doing any Good in Life : besides, the giving into uncommon

Ch. 4. in bis MARRIED STATE. 257

common or unbecoming Habits or Dress indicates a Want of that humble Deference, which is due to Mankind, and a secret Flaw in the Understanding of the Person, who is guilty of such a Misconduct; of all which the following Characters will furnish you with Examples to be avoided.

Amongst the first, that came to congratulate the happy Pair, was Miss Celebris, a Toast 62 Years of Age, who divides her whole Time between her Milliner, Mantuamaker, and Dreffing Woman. She difguised herself with a large Hoop, a flowered Stomacher, an embroidered Gown, Patches, a curled Tate, Jewels, a back Head-dress, and an undecent Pair of Stays; making Age ridiculous with the flaunting Airs of her Youth, and vainly supposing that fine Cloaths and fashionable Dresses can hide the Imperfections and Decays of Nature. This Lady, who for many Years had ferved for a Pattern of the Fashions to the rest of her Sex in the West, was accompanied by a very pretty young Miss of fifteen, who, by her Dictates had inclosed herself in such an enormous Concave, or Hoop-petticoat, that she waddled up and down like a bigbellied Woman, and appeared so bloated as to give an evil World Room enough to question

258 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

le:

th

u

n

IT

n

question her Innocence; and the more so, when, looking a little higher, she supplied them with further Proof to confirm their Suspicion, by exposing the Beauties of her naked Bosom, under the slight Covering of a Tucker. A Custom, which cannot in any wise raise her Esteem amongst the Virtuous and Sincere, but will certainly expose her to the Temptations of the Vicious, and to the Malignity of wicked Tongues, tho' she be ever so innocent. Not that I would deny young Ladies the Advantages of a becoming Dress, or a prudent Use of fashionable Changes in their Cloaths: She must be allowed to deferve all the Ornaments that Nature and Art can furnish her with: but yet permit me to add that the fair Sex, in themselves, are such a perfect Work of Nature, that it is impossible for them to add any thing that can be more ornamental to what they already enjoy. An indifferent Face and Person, kept in perpetual Neatness, will always attract a Number of Admirers.

However, these Ladies abovementioned, as they can plead Custom for their Dress, are much less culpable, in my Opinion, where the Intention is innocent, than that frenchisted Lady who came galloping into

d

the Court-yard, in a black Cap and Feather, a Riding Coat, and a Peruke, or, at least, with her Hair tied up, in Imitation of the smart Part of Mankind. A Dress much unbecoming the fair Sex, and which can in no wife add to their Beauty; nor fmite more effectually their Male Beholders. For, let those Ladies consider, whether Men are not more likely to be struck by a Figure entirely Female, than by fuch a one as Men may see every Day in their own Glasses: or, if they please, let them restect upon their own Hearts, and think how they would be affected, should they meet a Man on Horse-back, in his Breeches and Jackboots, at the same Time dressed up in a round-eared Cap, and a short Cloak. They that love French Fashions should always reflect, before they take them up, how far an English Woman may venture herself in a foreign Dress with Advantage: for, as Liveliness and Affurance are in a peculiar Manner the Qualifications of the French. the same Habits and Customs will not give the same Offence to that People which they produce amongst us. The distinguishing Character of English Women is Modesty; but the French distinguish themselves by Vivacity. And when this our National Virtue appears in that Female Beauty, for which

which English Ladies are celebrated, above all others in the Universe, it makes up the most amiable Object in the Eye of Man.

Army had been in Danger; as if his fine as of his fine Gentlemen, who could be fo disagreeable as Mr. Green-bead! He is great Grandson to one, who rode Admiral at Sea with 2000 l. per Ann. This is the Foundation of his Family, yet it was remarked this Youngster's Discourse was perpetually on the Subject of his Family; he was continually flinging the Register of his Genealogy on the Table. Which is highly fulfome and ungenteel, and shewed that he was big with Conceit, and more obliged to his Ancestors for his Blood than for his Wit. The wife Man will never rake in the Ashes of the Dead, to disturb their Memory by Vanity. He will adopt their Virtues, by Imitation and Practice, but have a Care of their Vices.

The young Officer that carried Fire in his Eyes, and at every Word feemed to threaten Vengeance to the Person that durft be so bold as to interrupt him, is to be extremely condemned for his childish and mean Rhetoric on his own Personances. He was continually haranguing upon the Exploits and Services he has done. I did this,

thi thi no Ai Bi th

CH

fer to w ev te

S V T a h

P

H

this, said he, at the Battle of Dettingen, and this at the Battle of Fontenoy; and, had I not feized on such a Post at Culloden, the Army had been in Danger; as if his small Brigade alone had defeated the Defigns of the Enemy. The Company, who prefently faw he was too ambitious of Praise to deserve any, denied him the Reputation, which he begged fo largely; and he will ever be numbered amongst the Fops; to teach us to deserve Panegyric, but not to play the Orator ourselves. Though our Skill, our Courage, our Conduct, and our Valour are well approved, we may lose at Table the Glory won in the Field, and talk away, in Winter Quarters, the Honour we have purchased in a whole Campaign. Deep Rivers move with filent Majesty; shallow Brooks alone make a Noise and Tumult among Pebbles.

What could be more odious than to hear old Mr. Roberts borne down with Age and the Infirmities of his Youth, and scarce able to creep from his Coach to the Parlour, lard his Discourse with Oaths and Imprecations? When he first met Mr. Jones, his Salute was, Damn ye, Tom, I am glad to see thee. Is not this a quaint Salutation? First to pack a Man away to Hell.

262 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

Hell, and then protest he is glad to see him there so conveniently lodged: Certainly this old Man, who has one Foot already in the Grave, must imagine that there is great Hopes of Promotion in Hell, or he would never recommend his Friends to be damned. Nor is it any Excuse to fay this and fuch like Compliments are Marks of English Familiarity, or Words without a Meaning. For, though it must be confessed, that, to deliver an old Acquaintance over to Satan, without asking his Confent to the Conveyance, is Freedom with a Vengeance; yet, at which End of the Compliment shall we find the Kindness? And, though they may stand for Cyphers in England, it is to be feared, they will purchase eternal Torments in Hell, the State of the damned.

None, however, deserves more Pity than the young Gentleman, as they call him; though I confess he looked more like a Porter, who came along with Mr.—
He is the Son of a late Lord Mayor of London, who, by his honest Industry, gathered a great Estate; but was so imprudent as to bring his Children up in France; by which they lost the Virtues of their Foresathers, and came Home, at his Death, brim-

brin Ed me Cha Air tion as for ran ter, Ta he Fea Tra Th Orr the our fore

Ch.

whi and Tay Pui

Per is well

Sho upo on

are we brim-full of the Vices imbibed by a foreign Education. He has neither Wit, Judgment, nor Behaviour. He assumes the Character of Quality, with too great an Air of Haughtiness; and degrades his Station by keeping too mean Company. And as if his Qualifications were to be fought for on his Back, and not in his Head, he ranfacks every Mercer's Shop for the Matter, and confults the whole Company of Taylors, for the Form of his Cloaths. But he is a living Example, that, though fine Feathers make fine Birds, yet furely gaudy Trappings cannot make fine Gentlemen. The Meanness of the Soul will tarnish the Ornaments of the Body; especially when these Ornaments are of more Value, than our Station and Purfe can support: Therefore the Maxim is deferving our Attention, which bids us be neat without Gaudiness, and genteel without Affectation. And the Taylor must take Measure both of our Purse and our Quality, as well as of our Person: For a Suit, that fits the Character, is more fashionable than that which sits well on the Body. Though we use both Shops and Taylors, we ought to depend upon neither; nor build our Reputation on Silks, nor our Worth on Stuffs, which are the Excrements of poor Animals. But we should dress ourselves with good Humour.

mour, a fine Behaviour, and a noble Difposition; and we shall keep the Mob at a Distance: Whereas they that imagine they can dazzle Men into Respect, merely with Scarlet and Gold-Lace, will fall short of their Expectations.

CHAP. V.

Regula has not manyment decide equi-

The prudent Conduct of Mr. Jones, in the Management of his Estate.

THE Compliments of Felicitation being repaid to his Neighbours, Mr. fones, by the discreet Advice of his Uncle, applied himself diligently to the Management and Improvement of that Part of his Estate, which Squire Western and Mr. Allworthy had agreed to make over to him already.

He now began seriously to apply the good Admonitions and Receipts of his wise and tender Uncle; and to practise his Example, who avoided both the Vice of Covetousness and Prodigality. He had always a Pleasure in doing Good; and, now God had put it more in his Power, he set about making a Provision for enlarging

Ch his nor

11.3

he but hac the hap tion the for Mr froi and fho vou par riet pro Cor thei of Bea that Ger gre ben

into

Joy:

Ch. 5. in his MARRIED STATE. 265 his Beneficence, by preferving a just Œconomy and splendid Frugality at Home.

THE ALLS HE STREET, FOR He had been gay, but never vicious; he had fallen into feveral youthful Sallies, but his Inclinations were virtuous: He had kept much Company, but had escaped their Temptations. And being now fo happily fettled with the Wife of his Affections, and to the universal Satisfaction of the Parents on both Sides, he refolves once for all to copy after the amiable Life of Mr. Allworthy, who had always refrained from the Vices of Country Gentlemen; and, with Astonishment that Drinking should be their darling Pleasure, endeavoured to improve his Senses in a more particular Manner, in the Midst of a Variety of beauteous Objects, which Nature produceth for Man's Entertainment in the Country, and not to help them to murder their Reason, nor adulterate the true Taste of Society, which is all we have above Beasts. He is now thoroughly perfuaded, that, to be a Landlord, he ought to be a Gentleman: And that a Peafant, with a great Estate, is no better than an Incumbent; the Incumbent only receiving that into his Stomach, which a Landlord enjoys with his Heart. Drunkenness, Gluttony,

r.

e,

is

11-

m

he

ise

X-

0-

al-

ow fet

ng

115

tony, and Riot are the Entertainments of an Incumbent : Benevolence, Civility, focial and humane Virtues are the Accomplishments of a Landlord. He resolves to be a Father to his Tenants, and a Patron to his Neighbours, and to fhew his Superiority to those in a lower Condition of Life, more by his Benevolence than by his Equipage and Estate. And as he had many Opportunities of seeing the happy Effects of Mr. Allworthy's good Offices, as an Advocate, a Referee, a Companion, a Mediator, and a Friend to the Distressed; by which Means his Counsel and Knowledge b:came a Guard to the Simplicity and Innocence of those of lower Talents, and the Entertainment and Happiness of those of equal Capacity; Mr. Jones fet out with the fame good Inclinations, and divided his Time between Solitude and Company. And as he really condemned those, who live upon Expectations, not on their Possessions; who make a Figure proportionable to what they may be, not to what they really are; who out-run their present Income, as not doubting to reimburse themselves out of the Profits of some future Place, Project, or Reversion, that they have in View; he fet himself seriously to regulate his Expences within the Compass of his present Income, without

Ch. wit to l mo dué bre in Eft nev Lav Bec Fut nero cloa tati and

> disp fires ever in t fes: that for ficer vict

Paff

facr

verl

by 1

Ch. 5. in bis MARRIED STATE. 267

of

1-

to

ri-

fe,

11-

ny

est

d-

di-

by

ge

the

of

the his

nd

up-

15;

hat

re;

not

of

ect,

he

nces

me,

nout

without any Regard to what might fall in to his Possession hereafter. And he was the more firmly riveted in this laudable Conduct, by observing how many Tradesmen break, who have met with no Misfortune in their Business; and how many Men of Estates are reduced to Beggary, who have never fuffered from Repairs, Tenants, Taxes, Law-suits, nor other Losses by Sea or Land. Because they, depending upon contingent Futurities, have exercised a romantic Generofity, assumed chimerical Grandeur, and cloathed themselves with a senseles Ostentation: which seldom fails to end in Ruin and Beggary; according to the old Proverb, They who live by Hope will die by Hunger. Thus and bus and making the

The good Œconomist makes it an indispensable Rule in Life, to contract his Defires to his present Condition; and, whatever may be his Expectations, to live within the Compass of what he actually possesses: reckoning it to be absolutely necessary, that all Liberality should have Frugality for its Basis and Support. So that a beneficent Person is acted always by the Convictions of Reason, not by the Impulses of Passion or corrupt Inclinations. He never facrificeth to Fools, Knaves, Flatterers, nor

N 2

to

268 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

to the deservedly Unhappy; but takes Care to secure an Ability to do Things Praise-worthy, on all Opportunities of affording any Assistance, where it ought to be. Y a should be be a pound and a pound a

Marriage Articles But H Shink it is not oclow, a Gentleman to take Advice, I

Mr. Allworthy's Advice to his Nephew Jones, with Directions for the Management of his Family, Conduct in Life; and Proposals of Marriage between several Dependants.

R. Allworthy grew every Day more enamoured of his Nephew Jones; who, by his obliging Behaviour and prudent Conduct, promised a thorough Obedience to all his Commands and Directions. But, as he knew him to be too young and unexperienced, to be left entirely to his own Management; and having observed that Dryden's Satyr, Full Pockets and empty Heads; great Estates in Land, and not in Wit, is but too often verified where an Estate and Riches pour in upon a young Heir, who has been only taught to spend, and not to manage and improve them; he took a proper Opportunity to deliver himself to his Nephew in the following Manner:

Ch.

akes

ve

· m

be th

· ta

· th

· ha

1

· E

c th

go C

· fr

· sp

· ni

· C

• ce

e ne

e no

" m

as

W

C

to the defervedly Unhappy; but takes is shown Things of the conduct of the conduc very fatisfactory: and, as a Token of my Confidence in you, I now make you a Present of one hundred Pounds a Year ' more than I fettled upon you by the · Marriage Articles. But as I think it is not below a Gentleman to take Advice; I ' think it also my Duty to give you certain Rules for preserving and improving those good Seeds, which by God's Bleffing have taken Root in you.

1. ' Live as becomes a Christian; postpone all temporal Engagements to those of Eternity. Comply with all the Maxims of the Gospel. They lie under a Mistake, who fancy that Virtue is an Enemy to ' good Breeding: that a Man must turn off ' Civility to commence a Saint: and disband from the Society of Men to keep a Corre-' spondence with God. No, no: Christia-' nity makes Men honest indeed, but not ' Clowns: it forbids Grimace, but not Sincerity: it puts a Mean between Foppishe ness and Rusticity; and forbids to shew no Breeding, by affecting to shew too much. Virtue smooths the Brow, as well ' as the Conscience, and knows to teme per innocent Mirth with a feafonable Re-N 3 · fervedness.

n

270 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

fervedness. So that we may keep up to

the Height of our Duty to God, without

' dropping our Obligation to Neighbour-

· hood and Society on on It should I have

2. Serve your King and Country, if called thereunto, not with a View of Interest or Glory, but with a Sense of Duty.

—An interested Man throws off Honesty, when he takes up the Desire of Wealth; and is as far from being a trusty Minister or Officer to his Prince, as a faithful Servant to his Master. They who are Slaves to Money command Conscience, and scorn to truckle to the unchangeable Commands of Good and Evil.

3. Place not your Affections so much on any worldly Enjoyment, as to make it the Object of your Happiness. Worldly Happiness is precarious. All that this World gives may be taken away. And the most wealthy, the most powerful, the most dignissed Person upon Earth, has this only Advantage above the Peasant, that in a Moment he may tumble lower, and consequently be more miserable.
They who have most to lose, have most to sear. Money never makes a Man rich: the more he has, the more he covets. He

is

Ch.

'is

h

OI E

· bu

· to

·E

th

· W

· fo

· v

R

· ke

· li

· u

ar a

· S

· go

'ir

· ra

W

Ch. 6. in his MARRIED STATE. 271 is not poor that has enough; but he that has Millions, if he desires more.

ir Obligation to Neighbour-4. Think it no more below the Station of a Gentleman to take Care of an Estate, than to posses one. It is not ' good to suspect a Steward without a Cause: but it is against the Laws of Prudence to trust him too far. It is a dangerous Experiment to put even Honesty itself to 'Trial And it has been too often known that a Servant will cheat without Scruple. when he can without Discovery. Therefore call your Steward often to Account, ' view the Rent-Rolls, and balance your Receipts with your Expences. This will keep you within Compass, and you will ' live handsomely upon your own, and not upon the Sweat of poor Shop-keepers and Labourers. To take upon Credit is 'a Blur to a Gentleman's Reputation. ' Sparing and Parsimony lead not to New-' gate or the Fleet: But Prodigality, Gameing, Wine, and Miffes.

5. I advise you to keep up an Equipage,

rather genteel than great: such a one as

will answer your Station, and shall be

proportioned to your Estate. And the

Way to be content with your present

N 4.

For-

272 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

Fortune, is neither to defire to be greater, of fear to be delie when all bomelticks, or reprehend any of your Domelticks,

6. Behave to your menial Servants more like a Father than a Master: and treat them as free-born Subjects, not Slaves. We differ from them only in Fortune, not in Nature. And therefore it is our Duty to allow them Instructions as well as Food. If Servants are not acquainted with their Duty to God and Man, and be permitted to live without Hope of Reward or Fear of Punishment, they degenerate into Idleness and Licentiousness; and, when they are dismissed, the Maids too

frequently live Proffitutes, and the Men

die Thieves and Robbers.

Nodershop in tour

'7. Never admit a Debauchee into your Service. Clumfiness may be polished by civil Conversation; and Skill may be improved by Practice: but vicious Habits only feldom wear away, and throw their Contagion amongst Thousands; and, when once it gains upon a Family, it seldom stops. So that let me caution you to examine more narrowly a Servant's Behaviour than his Abilities.

ad bloom & mond surv bns 18:0 Finally,

drive bosomer)

Ch.

· to

4 Ir

cl

· A

4 S

4 0

· V

· t

·f

. C

·f

4

. (

61

4 1

. 1

go

m

fo

8. Finally, when you shall be forced to reprehend any of your Domesticks, avoid Heat, and never fally into Scrains of Indecency Anger is ungovernable and clamorous; as unfit to give, as to take · Advice. It drowns Reason by Noise and Tumult, and feldom pronounces a just Sentence, but when it intends an unjust one. It throws a Man off his Guard, and even below his Dignity, and betrays those Weaknesses we should blush to own upon the Torture, A choleric Correction is · feldom well taken: it rather irritates than heals and strikes out Resentment. not Sorrow; fo that the best Way to per-' fuade Servants to obey with Respect, is to command with Moderation: to judge first of Faults, before we punish them. · Put a Difference between a Chance, and a deliberate Action; wink at some Offences: ' laugh at others : chastise all with Calm-' ness and Charity: proportion the Pain to. the Fault. and Edunoms notes do Danielt

And now, Nephew Jones, continued the good old Gentleman, I have one Thing more to mention to you: an Affair of great Concern in my Opinion; and which, both for my own and your Credit, I should be N 5 glad

274 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

glad to have settled as soon as possible, and in a Way that at the same Time we endeavour to wipe off the Stain, it may be done in such a Manner, as effectually to provide for those, who have, in any wise, suffered through your Means, or on your Account.

You are not unsensible of the common Report concerning your own Birth : and you have had your little Flights. By these Means we see Jenny Jones, poor Partridge the School-mafter, and that filly Girl Molly Seagrim, (who, if deferted to the Temptations of the World, will date her Ruin, at the Time you corrupted her Innocence,) become the Objects of your Care, and must be provided for. Not that I would have you think I am pleading for their Vices, or excuse their Wickednesses; but Gratitude and Justice demand your Relief. Had it not been for your dear Mother's Persuasions, which engaged Jenny to cover her own Difgrace by taking your Birth upon herfelf, what Scandal would have spread against my Family all over the Country! what Sorrow would have disturbed the Peace of my Soul! and it is more than probable that young pretty Body would never have been forced; (for fo I must believe it, and not that the ever by Choice gave herfelf up) to a lewd, wicked Ch. wie tent Mo

food own was

of yet we

ph urg of the

Fu Co pre

> rej a g

Sh

fee he

yo fa

e

O'SZIZE W

wicked Life about the Country for a Maintenance. I shall never forget the becoming Modesty, and deep Concern with which she received my fevere Reprimand, when the stood before meguilty of Whoredom, by her own Confession. I little thought then that she was guiltless; and that Shame and Confusion of Face belonged to my own Sifter. And yet I cannot help recollecting, how, as it were by a fecret Impulse, and almost prophetic Spirit, I promised what I now am urging you to perform, and to take Care of you, then her reputed Child. I told her that I did not talk to her by way of Infult, but to caution and strengthen her for the Future. I applauded her open and fincere Confession, and seeming Repentance; and promised to convey her from the Scene of Shame, and to provide for her, and her reputed Child, on Condition she would be a good Girl, the rest of her Days, and inform me, who was the wicked Man that feduced her. Is it possible I should forget her modest Reply? She, regardless of her own Safety, with a Flood of Tears thanked me heartily for my intended Kindness to you, her helpless Child. He is innocent, faid she, and, I hope, will live to be grateful for all the Favours you shall shew him. Bur, Bur,

But, on her Knees, the intreated me not to perfift in asking her to declare the Father of her Infant. And, continued the, I promise you faithfully you shall one Day know. Now, how all these Things are providentially come to pass, you can bear me Witness. She kept her Engagements with your Mother, to her own Difgrace, and Ruin, if neglected. It was her Behaviour that preserved you from being exposed to the common Hardships of Foundlings, and, according to her Promise, she has not only informed me of your Birth and Parentage, but at a Time and in a Manner that rescued you out of the Jaws of a violent Death, and placed you in your present happy Situation, by convincing me that you are my own Sister's eldest Son. After this Recital of Merit, I am certain, your good Nature will be ready to concur in my Proposal, which is to procure her a good Husband, and enable them to live. - I believe the has honest Principles! -Necessity alone, in my Opinion, has driven her into that Way of Life we found her in .-She will certainly take up and repent, and make a good, prudent, and virtuous Wife.-She has a Right to put me in mind of my Promife.—She has complied with her's— I cannot give her less than 60 l. a Year for Life, and we will get your Spoufe to join with her ture Inte

mu

OW

Par

10 is t fup thi lay Te Di fro he ga cec fin ma wa an Sc ftr

hi

18

Ch. 60 in bis MARRIED STATE. 277

with us in proposing a Marriage between her and Supple; for he is a quiet good-natured Man, and no doubt we shall have Interest enough with Western to give him the Living of whose Incumbent is very old. Mr. Jones readily agreed to his Uncle's Proposal; many Parts of which had much affected him; well knowing that his own Fate had been involved in almost every Particular of Jenny's Life.

Well then, continued Mr. Allworthy, it is true Partridge has been better able to support himself under his Missortunes; but this is owing to his Sex; which did not lay him open to fo many and fuch like Temptations, as a Woman is subject to in Distress: and as they originally proceeded from the same Cause, as those of Jenny Jones, he should be as much an Object of our Regard: besides, he is now pretty well advanced in Life, and less able to strike into Bufinels, which he has been deprived of fo many Years, on your Account. Jenny was his Servant many Years, and, shewing an Inclination to Learning, he, who was a School-master, was so good-natured as to instruct her in the Latin Tongue, which however proved of a very bad Consequence to him: for Jenny had no sooner owned you for for her Child, but the World immediately proclaimed him to be your Father, tho fhe fatisfied me with the most folemn Affurances that the Man was entirely out of my Reach, and was neither subject to my Power, nor in any Probability of becoming an Object of my Goodness. He was even brought before me a long Time after, upon the Accufation of his Wife, who, spirited up with Tealoufy, supported only by quick Inventions forged in the Shop of evil Report, laid the Charge so home to her Husband. that I was deceived into a Belief of his Guilt. And, in Consequence of this Belief, I deprived him of a small Annuity which I had allowed him for teaching the Neighbouring Children; tho' he perfifted in his Innocence with the most solemn Protestations: which now I find to be true. He also bore much from the rude Behaviour of his jealous Wife, and this brought him almost to De. spair, and both of them to a Morsel of Bread: till at last she paid the Debt of Nature; and he then left the Country where he was in Danger of Starving. Yet this honest Fellow retained so much Gratitude for his former Benefactor, that you no fooner fell in his Way than he resolved to ferve you, and to do the best of his Endeavours to support one whom he did not know

kni Bo hav

feld pri he

in tai

50 Mi yo Fa

tio the bo

W as an

the Sc up

co Be fy

Wan

Si

know was any more than a Child of my Bounty and Favour of What Hardships have you related he has undergone for you? What Faithfulness has he distinguished himfelf for in your Service? How did he imprudently leave his Bufiness, to ferve one he knew must presently himself want Bread, in all human Appearance? These, certainly, deserve our Notice. He must be rewarded. I will give him an Annuity of 50 h and, if you have no Objection, give Molly Seagrim the best Part of the Money you have recovered from her ungrateful Father, and we will, on these Considerations, try to make up a Match between them: For, in Justice, Tommy, you are bound to take her out of the Power of the World, and its Temptations. However, as your Crime with her was made public, and gave some Disgust to your Spouse, then Miss Western, I only propose this Scheme, and advise you first to consult her upon fo nice a Topic; and let it rather come from her, than from yourfelf.— Beware of laying a Foundation for Jealoufy! The World is very cenforious. And a Woman can never bear the very Appearance of a Favourite in her Husband's Affections. Old Love is foon renewed. A fmall Spark will blow up into a great Flame, and, should

280 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

should it once enter into the Head of Molly. that you retain a Liking to her, she may be imprudent or vain enough to boalt of your Favours; and, perchance, too forward to express her Gratitude to her Benefactor, in a Way too much bordering upon those Inclinations, which first corrupted your Innocence. Therefore I am quite clear in my Opinion, That, though it is your Duty to provide for her whom you have injured in that Manner, it must be done in such a Manner, as she may, at the same Time, be convinced that her Relief is not the Reward of Vice, but an Encouragement to Virtue: That it is not the Effect of your Paffion for her; but of your Lady's Prudence and Compassion to cover your youthful Follies, and to rescue her, otherwise forlorn and abandoned to the World, from Ruin and Distress: And, in fine, that it is tendered as a Price to purchase for her a virtuous, fober, chafte and modest Life and Conversation; which, as I said before, must be left to the Discretion and Management of my Niece Sopbia. And I defire she may be acquainted with these Proposals, and we will then meet, at her Leifure, to confult how to carry them into Action. L denier about its, that I to early

. group.

tul vindre you to avoid their Delines

Ch.

B ed. and to it ton the] in th I do any forfa -317 of t give play **ftrai** are l give dare Ho com ing piet mar

and not lity.

ous.

nest

then I it once enter into the Head of Melly,

But I have not yet finished all I intended. The Prospect of your little Flights and Miscarriages shews that Nature, left to itself, uncultivated, unwatched, is wanton and libertine; and loves to range in the Latitude of fenfual Pleasure, not within the Compass of Laws and Regularity. I do not mean by this Observation to cast any Reflections on you for what you have forfaken, and, I am fatisfied, repented of. - But to caution you against the Excesses of the Age. - If you loofe the Rein, and give Nature the whole Line of Duty to play with, it will break through that Restraint, and carry you beyond it. Passions are like the Mobile, the more Liberty you give them, the more they afk .- Whoever dare look little Sins in the Face without Horror; I have always feen, they foon commit great Sins with Pleafure; and, lulling Confcience to Sleep, boggle at no Impiery; break through all God's Commands, from Hell to fatisfy their Passion; and take it for granted that Gentlemen are not tied to Virtue, Patience, and Humility. Therefore it is against these dangerous, but too common Examples amongst the young Gentry about us, that I so earneftly conjure you to avoid their Destruction:

282 The History of Tom Jones Book III. tion; and to affure you that all Mankind are obliged to Virtue; and that this Obligation lies harder upon Gentlemen.

passes along unobserved in a Croudan Your For, Gentlemen are subject to more and greater Temptations, than their Inferiors; they advance more in View of their Enemy; stand the Mark of every Temptation; they feem marked out for Slaughter and Sacrifice; they live in the midst of Plague and Infection; and cannot take one Step without meeting Danger, nor breathe without drawing in Contagion. The World fawns on them: Passions revolt; and the Devil casts Nets to enfoare them. Fine Sights debauch the Eyes, Music the Ears, Ragou's the Taste, Perfumes the Smell, and false Principles the Understanding; Wine heats the Passions, and delicate Viands put them into a Ferment: So that it is evident that a Gentleman is befet on all Sides; each Vice batters his Constancy, and affaults his Innocence; and he must certainly yield to their Force, if he do not force Pride with Humility, Luxury with Continency, Intemperance with Sobriety, and Love of Pleasure with that of Duty, which can never be done by those that think themselves not tied to those Virtues with she was appur ing to

you

Befides,

Ch.

bai.

B you paff pref a F in a or C in a and The you Cri the Mo Th live the feri So up. the ado vag Eff Vie

is

ph

tion : and to affure you that all Mankind

Befides, you must no longer confider yourfelf a folitary Individual, or one that passes along unobserved in a Croud. Your present Fortune and Station at the Head of a Family, it may reasonably be expected in a little Time, fets you up as a Beacon, or Guide to a great Number of Souls, who, in all Probability, will copy your Behaviour and Conduct, your Faith and Morals. Therefore, in this Light also, Virtue is your indispensable Obligation. Gentlemen's Crimes become universal, like a Plague; they fweep away whole Families, and drive Mortality and Defolation before them .-The Vulgar are an apish Generation; they live on Imitation, and are carried away by the Example of the great ones, as the inferior Orbs by the Motion of the superior: So that, if a Master scatters his Vices among the Family, they are foon picked up, and worn as Robes of Honour. And, if Servants do not endeavour to ingratiate themselves into Favour by Flattering, and adopting their Master's Vices and Extravagancies, Sins supported by Escutcheon, Estate or Title, pass for Grandeur; and Vice at the Head of a pompous Retinue is often mistaken for Virtue. For, Nephew, the Vulgar judge by the Eyes, not by

284 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

by Reason; and whatever appears great, they conclude to be also good; as if Glittering and Value were synonymous Terms in the Book of Life.

I have done. Keep my Words in your Heart, and practife my Advice; and you will add Health to your Bones, Joy to your Friends, and overcome whatever shall oppose your temporal or spiritual Welfare.

CHAP. VII.

Containing several secret and curious Anecdotes concerning Love, Courtship, Matchmaking, and married Fellows of Colleges, who have sworn to live single.

R. Jones took the first Opportunity to communicate such Parts of the foregoing Conversation, as he was directed, to his beloved Sophia, in such a Manner as convinced her of the real Motive; and acquitted himself of any private Views in what was proposed for the Relief and Support of those distressed Women. She readily gave into every Particular, and, waiting upon Mr. Allworthy, took his Instructions how to open the Affair to the Parties concerned.

In

Ch.

aid I

upo
Weft
Mat
and
and
on t
who
all
and

tle, Min own Affi bro

C h

mu

• th

· b · F · p

· re

In the mean Time, Mr. Allworthy took upon himself the Talk of engaging Squire Western to join with him in making the Match between his Chaplain, Mr. Supple, and the Widow Waters, alias Jenny Jones; and also to persuade Partridge to venture on the buxom Molly Seagrim. The Squire, whose Brains were now entirely free from all Care and Anxiety about his Daughter, and given himself up so greatly to his Bottle, fince he found himself at Ease in his Mind upon her Marriage so greatly to his own Liking, never hefitated to lend his Assistance. But, when the Assair was broken to the reverend Divine, he demurred not a little: 'He could not, in ' Conscience, he said, take a Woman into his Bosom and Embraces, who had so ' notoriously lived with another Man, to the Difgrace of Christianity, of which he had the Honour of being a Preacher, -I shall, added he, by such an Action, be Partaker of other Men's Sins, and an ' Encourager of those Things I ought to ' preach against: And besides, he continued, my Marriage will oblige me to refign my Fellowship at College, which I ' am fworn to vacate upon certain Events.' Mr.

nè

d,

as

C-

at

ort

ily

ng

ns

n-

In

ple, professing himself greatly obliged to his Mr. Western, who could bear no Contradiction, and had but very little Knowledge of Things beyond his own Observation, and regarded no Laws, Limitations, nor Obligations, which he had feen violated by Custom, Connivance, or Impunity, laughed at the conscientious Clergyman for raising these scrupulous Objections. He could fcarce forbear Rapping, and told him, 'that he was over nice in his Casuistry. For that he could affure him, it was not the · Way to Preferment to stumble at a Wife with a good Living or Fortune; and ' that he could produce him a Doctor in Divinity, a Master of a Hall in one of the Universities, and Rector of two large Livings in the County of Middlesex, who, at the Time he was Fellow of Br-z-n N-Col. married a Woman that had been kept by Beau F-l-d-g, and kept ' his Fellowship many Years, notwith-' standing he was obliged by Oath to give it up. But, continued the Squire, I would not have thee degenerate into zuch ' a despiseable Character; I will give thee ' an Equivalent to refign thy Fellowship; and it is not quite clear that Mrs. Waters ever lived in Fornication.' Mr. Allworthy applauded them both: And Mr. Supple,

Oh.

ple,
Pati
foly

the how

Para dee wh rui the Ser he ner ho a

his Li

th

th

th

ple, professing himself greatly obliged to his Patron, rested upon his Promises, and resolved to make his Addresses to the young Widow, without further Delay; being, at the same Time, cautioned not to divulge how far they had prompted him to take that Step.

y

t

r

e

the conferentious Clergyman for raifing The next Difficulty was how to persuade Partridge to submit to make Courtship to a Girl, whose Character was so notoriously blasted, and confessedly debauched; or indeed to venture at-all upon a fecond Wife, who had been fo cruelly used, and totally ruined by she that was dead. However, the great and real Regard, and grateful Sense of Mr. Allworthy's Goodness, which he had manifested in so singular a Manner, as related, were Grounds enough to hope he would acquiesce in what so worthy a Person proposed for his Well-doing. And therefore, being called, Mr. Allworthy informed him abruptly of his Desire, that he should marry Molly Seagrim; and his Intention to fettle them handsomely in Life, independent of Service. Partridge was much confounded at the Novelty of fuch an unexpected Overture. He dreaded the Confequences of Marriage, should his fecond Wife prove as jealous as the first; 288 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

he loved his Master, and sat down in his Service, as one at the Height of his Ambition; and therefore defired his good Mafter not to think any more of it, and withdrew with a Felix quem faciunt aliena pericula cautum, determined to be guarded against all Sollicitations to a State, which he had experienced and feen fo unhappy amongst others. This, in some Measure, disconcerted Mr. Allworthy's Scheme, but he did not give it up.

Mistress Sophia Jones had no sooner received her Instructions how to act her Part, but she took the first Opportunity of her being alone with Mrs. Waters, to talk to her upon Marriage. The Subject was agreeable; and, as Mrs. Jones perceived her Passions work up with Defire, she fairly asked her, ' If she had any Thoughts that Way; and whether any suitable Person had proferred his Service? For, faid she, · I know I could prevail with my Father and Uncle to advance fomething handfome, for to make you happy in a good · Hufband .- What think you of the Doc-' tor, Mr. Supple?—He is a good-natured ' Man, and not despiseable in his Person.'-Mrs. Waters fetched a deep Sigh, - and, with her Eyes fixed on her Work, her profound

Ch.

Auf Tol adv Fon · le

' th · Q ters. pale

her for But

othe of h - a

dref trio

We him

I the Lad

fuch and tell

Vale in L

how wh r

I desi

Ch. 7. in bis MARRIED STATE. 289

found Silence, and blushing Modesty which, flushing into her Cheeks, gave sufficient Tokens of her Readiness to hearken to so advantageous a Proposal. Therefore Mrs. Jones continued, Well, Mrs. Waters, Silence, I perceive, gives Consent. Has the Doctor had Courage to ask you the Question himself?' At which, Mrs. Waters, never expecting fuch an Offer, grew pale on a sudden; but at last, recovering her Spirits, expressed her grateful Sense for fo kind a Wish from her Ladyship:-But affured her, that the Case was quite otherwise; that she had too mean an Opinion of herfelf, ever to aim at fuch an Honour, - and had given Countenance to the Addreffes of, she believed, an honest, industrious Tradesman in the Neighbourhood. Well! and have you engaged yourfelf to him? replied Mrs. Jones. No, Madam, I should never risque the Favours of your Ladyship and Family, by entering into fuch an Obligation, without your Privacy and Approbation. Besides, I must now tell you all: There is Sir Samuel Fairlop's Valet de Chambre pretends he is desperately in Love with me; you may remember, how he followed us about, and ogled me, wh n upon a Visit to his Lady; and how I defired your Leave, last Thursday, to take a Walls

Y

r

a Walk as far as the Hinds in the Park; it was, indeed, to meet him. He vows, he swears, and wishes the most shocking

it was, indeed, to meet him. He vows, he fwears, and wishes the most shocking Punishments upon his own Head, to perfuade me of his Sincerity. He tells me he has a good Dependence in Land of his own; and he is a very likely Man in Perfon: But, Madam, he is too young for me, I am old enough to be his Mother; and therefore have strove all I can, to prevent his gaining any Ascendency in my Assections. See here is a Letter he sent me this Morning.

To the most adorable Object of my Desires.

My Soul's Delight,

THE Distress I continually feel, since you, my Charmer, dealt so cruelly with me, as to reject my most sincere and tender Offers of myself and Fortune, has well nigh driven me to perpetrate that rash Declaration your Unkindness extorted from me, at our last Meeting: A Declaration, which the Force of the most violent Passion, that ever was, obliged me to make, in so impolite and abrupt a Manner. And therefore I look back upon it with an unconceivable Terror, lest thereby I have offended the Life of my Soul; and tremble, for Fear you will condemn the Presumption of this.

Cl th

pu th

lor

to

wila th

it. ter an

د د

•

Ch. 9.8 m bis MARRIED STATE. 291

this. But if as many Years of bumble Services, as Fate has allotted for my Life, may purchase a Pardon for my Temerity, I devote them entirely to you.— Henceforth rule my every Word and Action, I had almost said my every Wish.— But that is out of your Power.
—In Spite even of yourself, I must for ever love,— for ever worship you! Permit me then to owe to your Bounty, what else my own Obstinacy will give me, the Title of the

Most adorable Jenny's

Truest and everlasting Lover,

P. VANDERMULEN.

weble Object of my Defive Mrs. Jones read this romantic Letter with her accustomed gracious Smile, and, laying it down upon the Table, seemed neither to approve, nor openly to disapprove it. But putting on a Steadiness of Countenance much superior to one of her Years, and fixing her Eyes strongly upon Mrs. Waters, she began: 'I have been taught that no Friendship is like that, which exerts its Powers most in Time of Need. ' Hitherto I have entertained you, Mrs. · Waters, not as a Servant, but as a Com-' panion. I should therefore be very much wanting in my Duty, not to give you ' my friendly Sentiments in an Affair, that

e

30

n

of

S.

292 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

Ch.

· to

P

· e

fi

a

r

· fi

. (

DOL

cla

pro

dir

..(

fo nearly concerns your future Welfare in Life. You have already experienced many bitter Things, you have been dein Life. ceived and diffressed, you have been too credulous, and yielded to Words of Destruction. And it is my Opinion, that, should you give Way to Mr. Vandermulen, you would presently find that your Misfortunes would return. - I fee too, too much of the modish Rant in his Stile, to believe him either willing or able to make you happy .- My Aunt Western, though, in other Particulars, she did not use me kindly, gave me excellent Instructions to arm me against such Lovers. I will repeat fome of them, it may be you may meet with fome Hints that shall suit your own Case :- Do not, said fhe, yield to any Sollicitations, that may call either your Honour or Reason in Question. If Oaths, Imprecations, Vows, and Adorations are made Use of, hear them as Words of Course; believe none of them, and folemnly declare no Vow shall deceive you, but that of Marriage.-Avoid, as much as possible, what Religion calls 'Temptation, and the World Opportunities. For, did the good Women but know how many Thousands of their Sex have been gradually betrayed from in-6 nocent Ch. 7. in bis MARRIED STATE. 293

nocent Freedoms and pretended Honour

to Ruin and Infamy; and how many

' artful Men have begun with Flatteries, Protestations, and Endearments, but end-

ed with Reproaches, Perjury, and Per-

' fidiousness, they would shun, like Death,

the very first Approaches of one that ' might lead them into Labyrinths of Guilt

and Misery, from which they never can

extricate themselves .- And, by strictly

adhering to these Instructions, I am ar-

' rived to the happy State you see me pos-

· fess.— Nor do you want any more to · feal your own Happiness, than to follow

· my Advice.'

Mrs. Waters had too much good Sense not to acknowledge the Favour; and declared her entire Submission to, and Approbation of whatever her Ladyship should direct her to do. 'Well, then, I advise you, continued Madam Jones, as you declare yourfelf disengaged, both in Pro-' mise and Affections, that you will reserve ' your Person for a more suitable and ad-' vantageous Match.—I can fee.—I know. -I am much deceived, if the Parson has ' not a fneeking Kindness for you .- I have observed he looks at you with a

Sort of Fierceness, which never before · appeared 0 3

294 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

'appeared in his Countenance - No longer fince than Yesterday at Dinner, we could 'all take Notice, that he looked he fighed. the leered again, and lighed, grew pale, 'Vand then, red as Fire, his Lips quivered, his very Hand trembled, and he is quite fell off from his Stomach, fince you have been placed at my Papa's Table: And yet the good Man, I find, has not Courage enough to feek Relief, where, I hope, he would find it in you. He will certainly out with it at last. Love will not be smothered with Bashfulness .--' Modesty can be no Hinderance, where real Honour is intended. And now I think on it, he certainly watched your going this Morning, as usual, to walk on the Terras; for I am told he did not come off till the Bell called to Dinner: ' But you know we were otherwise engaged To-day.— Hufh! fomebody knocks at the Door.

Mr. Supple, after he had left his Patrons, went immediately upon the Love-Expedition.— He, that Moment, acquitted his intended Bride of all Crimes and Misdemeanors. She appeared to him in the most amiable Light: And indeed she was very suitable to his Age.— He had sought her

Ch.

But, the Objection his frequent

Jone Diffe and Min fee

mu Swi

he he

Low tol

Fo th

.

her almost every where without Success. But, hurried on by Fears and Expectations, the old Batchelor resolved to try if the Object of his Enquiry was not deposited in his young Lady's Chamber, where they frequently retired in an Afternoon to work. It was he that knocked Madam Jones, perceiving the little Confusion her Discourse had thrown Mrs. Waters into, ranand opened the Door,—and they both for a Minute stood speechless and astonished to fee Mr. Supple so near; and he was as much confounded at the Sight of his Sweet-heart: Till, recovering himself, he broke Silence with begging Pardon for interrupting her Ladyship, and pretending he was feeking for Mr. Jones. However, he accepted the Lady's Invitation to fit down, and bear them Company.

It is not to be expressed how, in every Look and Action, he confirmed, in Mrs. Waters, the Belief of what she had been told just before: And, at last, Madam. Jones gave him an Opportunity to signify, the same in his Words: 'What, said she, 'Mr. Supple, are you resolved to die a 'Batchelor.— We shall by and by shun 'you as a Woman-hater.— Yet, I am O 4 'sure,

296 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

fure, if I have any Skill in Physiogno-' my, you are neither fo cold, nor fo in-' fenfible of Love, as you pretend. - I ' can help you to a good Wife, that will comfort you, take Care of you, and ' fmirk you up as fmart, as fome of those beau Parfons we saw in London .- And the Lady, I would recommend, is a · Friend of mine, - and, who knows, but ' she may bring you a good Fortune?' Mr. Supple, who knew not that Madam was in the Secret, was very eager to be informed, who the Person was, represented to him, in fuch agreeable Terms. Well then, continued Madam Jones, it is Mrs. Waters, the Widow that fits here; and I can tell, by your very Motions, she is the Object of your own Affections.' I confess it, Madam, she is the only Person I love in the World, and have longed for an Opportunity to tell her fo,' faid he. To which, Mrs. Waters returned a most genteel, and yet condefcending Answer: So that, in a short Time, they were married to the mutual Satisfaction of all Parties.

CHAP.

Ch.

Co

Cha

to I

Ma

her

pli

to

he

Le

or

ed

th

ta

force if I have any Skill in Phy

chibble of Love, as you preter

Containing something worth every Body's Knowledge.

11

d

d

Partridge's Indifference, and the Forwarding of the Marriage, in the preceeding
Chapter put a Stop to the bringing the other
to bear, for some Time. However, at last
Madam Jones, who had all the Time cast
her Eye upon Seagrim's Family, and supplied them with Necessaries, took Molly into her Dairy, with express Orders not to set
her Foot within the House, without her
Leave or Direction.

Molly obeyed, and every Thing went on smoothly, till one Day her Lady, attended by Mrs. Honour, who had been privy to the Girl's Failings, called upon her, and, taking her Home, laid before her a just Representation of her Crimes; severely rebuked her for her particular Sin with Mr. Jones, and threatened her with the most cruel Usage, if ever she should be found in his Company any more. She also said that her Husband had conceived so great an Aversion to her Person, that it was with the

298 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

utmost Importunity she had been able to restrain his Fury, and to hinder his punishing her for Fornication, as the Law directs.

Subject without Horror | But, Huffy, faid fhe, you owe your very Being to my Compassion for my Sex. 'You must have perished, had I not bege ged my Papa to give you Bread, whom I have had Reason to hate above all Women. You have not only been a public Difgrace to our Sex, but you brought Shame to the Man of my Affections, at a 'Time you knew he was engaged to me.-' You can never make me Satisfaction for that Peace of Mind you robbed me of. ' Here is my Maid Honour can justify the Truth of all I fay. And I have stooped fo low as to fend for you, not out of any Regard to your Person, but to rebuke you severely for your Immoralities, your ' wicked Actions, and, if it be possible, to work in you a true Sorrow and Repentance. It is the Saving of your Soul I ' have at Heart, or you should never ' more have eat my Bread. They are fuch as you, who, as Solomon expresses it, lead ' Men to Death, after they have ruined their Families: who allure the young unexperienced Youths to Destruction. this of an only of going of You

Chil

. Not

dor Sul

· Ma

the

the

' isd

arc Mo

' fur

· cle

ov in

· Pr

' tio

In

· Pu

'In wi

of do

e th

·I

rits, Nat

Chi 8 in bis MARRITO STATE 299

'You have only this in your Favour, that you have not added Murder to Whoredom. I know not how to speak on such a Subject without Horror! But, it is certain Multitudes of Infants have been made away by those, who brought them into the World, and were afterwards ashamed or unable to provide for them. Where is the Affizes, where some unhappy Wretch is not executed for the Murder of a Bast-' ard? Besides many more of these Female ' Monsters of Inhumanity, which may be ' supposed to be wholly undiscovered or cleared for Want of legal Proof. To pass over those who by unnatural Practices do, in some Measure, defeat the Intentions of · Providence, and destroy their Conceptions, even before they are ripe for Birth. ' In which Cases, tho' they escape present ' Punishment, the Guilt is the same.—My 'Indignation rifeth, I am almost angry with myself for admitting such an Object of Contempt into my Presence. If you ' do not confirm your Repentance with a thorough modest and religious Behaviour, ' I will deliver you up to Punishment,'

Molly, no longer able to support her Spirits, dropped down at Madam's Feet; but Nature, being so kind as to affish her with a O 6 Profusion

300 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

Profusion of Tears, quickly relieved her Voice; and with Sighs, Sobs, and frequent Sinkings and half Words, bewailed, promifed, and intreated fo bitterly, unfeignedly, and pathetically, that, after Mrs. Honour had wiped her Face, and raifed her off her Knees by Order of her Lady, Madam Jones, exchanging her severe for a mild compassionate Countenance, took her fainting Penitent by the Hand, and in a pleafing Tone proceeded: Well, Molly, I am convinced that you are not that abandoned Sinner, as I expected to find you, -I am in great Hopes you thoroughly repent of your former Life, and firmly resolve to live virtuous and chafte for the Future.-I am not unmerciful, my Heart is ever open to Conviction,-and as I am now ' fatisfied that you are no longer that wicked, lewd, shameless, and vicious Girl, as you was before your Conversion, I ' shall think it no Shame, but take a Pleafure in admitting you to my Conversation, at all proper Opportunities, and in di-' stinguishing you by my Favours.' And, so, giving her a small Token for the Pocket, she dismissed her, for the Present, with a Command to wait at her Closet next Morning.

Madam

Ch.

Ti lier

abl

o was

w of

tha

he

mo Di

co

G

lo

ne

G

k

N

Madam Jones delivered herself so agreeably in these last Words, that poor Molly was almost as deeply oppressed with Joy, as just before the had funk under the Burden of her Sorrow. She bleffed her good Stars that had influenced her Lady fo much in her Favour, and fincerely refolved never more to draw down upon herfelf, her Displeasure. She, however, was not able to compose her Spirits, so agitated between Grief and Joy: Still almost hung between Hope and Despair; and impatiently longed to be informed of the Event of their next Meeting. Her Lady's Countenance, the fancied, prognofticated nothing but Good to her: and again her own Conscience kept her in Fear.

d

e

r

N

I

Next Morning, Molly Seagrim was punctually at her Lady's Closet, who had disposed of Mrs. Honour another Way; and, being alone, after a very short Hint of what had passed the Day before between them, Madam Jones continued, 'As it has

pleased God to bless me with my Heart's

Defire, and placed me in a Station capable of doing Good, I should be wanting in

' my Duty both to God and Man, should

' I let slip any Opportunity of Benevolence

and Charity. I am convinced that all

Virtues are defective which are not tinctured

302 The History of Tom Jone & Book III. tured with Charity nor can I be truly charitable, if I deny Forgiverels to the Penitent: Hil do not patronize the Orphan, and the Widow : if I neglect to affift the Friendless, and to guide the Igonorant. And Lam convinced not only of your Reformation ; but, by what happened between us Yesterday, that · Roughness of Temper is apt to discountenance the timorous or modest Person. Now, Molly, without further Reserve, if you are not contracted to any other Perfon, I have one in my Eye, that will make you a good Husband; and, in order thereto, I shall take Care, you shall bring ' him a competent Fortune for you both to live on, provided you are fincerely refolved to lead a new and virtuous Life, and can be content with a fober Man of · five and forty or fifty Years of Age:-' It is Partridge, my Husband's Man.-His " Master has promised him 50 l. per Annum for his Life: But he shall never have it, except he will oblige me by marrying you; if you approve of it .- My Intention is to retrieve your Character, and make you an honest Woman.' The Proposal was too advantageous for Molly to reject it. But after her humble Submission, and many thankful Speeches, and Promises of her

CH.

repl

· as

· H

· n

All ftro

pr Co for an

Fi m ol

good

CHI & in bis MARRIED STATE 303

good Conduct for the Future, Madam Jones replied, 'That this was no more than a

· Proposal or Scheme of her own; and that,

as the was not fure to bring it to bear, the

" must be cautious, and not give the least

" Hint of it to her Maid Honour, nor to

' any Body else, till further Notice. In the

mean Time she promised to use her best

' Endeavours to bring Things to bear.'

timerous or modest Perlon

ion lo ashaber

The whole Affair lay now upon Mr. Allworthy, who attacked Partridge fo ftrongly at their next Parley upon the Subject of Marriage, that he replied with a Fiat voluntas tua; and, by his Advice, paid his Respects to Molly Seagrim, who by her Instructions decently accepted the Proposal. the Nuptials, were performed in the most private Manner, and the new married Couple were ordered to settle at a Town fome Miles diftant, yet they gave the World an Opportunity to rally the Virtue of Mr. Jones, supposing him still to retain a criminal Affection for her, and that he had obliged his trusty Servant to cover a new Crime by taking her to Wife.

tacks his goXINATeAnH S

noon the Body of the Perfort

Of Envy, and its direful Effects, represented in the Directions of Lady Bellaston to disturb Mr. Jones's Family.

THESE Weddings were very difgustful to Mrs. Honour, who thought her Services merited as much, or more Regard, than some who received these Favours; and that her Years, which might shortly place her amongst the Ancients, were as ripe for a Husband as any others: and therefore she now began, in good Earnest, to meditate how she should disturb their Peace. Envy determines her to be vexatious and unjust.

Envy is an ill-natured Vice: it loves Mischief for Mischief's Sake, and takes Pleasure in Torment. 'Tis a Kind of Turnkey by Birth, and an Executioner by Profession. It feeds on Stench, sucks Poison from Cordials, and Insection from Persumes. It never does a good Turn, but when it designs an ill one; and seldom takes Things by the right Handle. There is no Mischief lies out of the envious Man's Reach: for, tho' he has not Courage or Opportunity to

fet u attachis H

triut

Hap grim have diate ima it. I and ed, Cor Mil

> atto wh caff Mi Ho Bri it i

> > pa

De

aga

Ch. 9. in bis MARRIED STATE. 305
fet upon the Body of the Person hated, he
attacks his good Name, and falls foul upon
his Honour. And when that is brought into Contempt and Disrepute, it is easy to
triumph over Grandeur and Estate.

Mrs. Honour, I say, so much envied the Happiness of Mrs. Waters and Molly Seagrim, either of whose Places she would have been glad to supply, that she immediately vowed Vengeance against those she imagined had been the chief Promoters of it. Her Passion was committed to Writing, and Lady Bellaston was immediately informed, not only of what had passed, but of her Conjectures; aggravated with as many Misrepresentations as her Envy could invent against her Master Jones.

The Receipt of this Account prefently attoned for all the Fears, and Impatience, which Mrs. Honour's long Silence had occasioned to Lady Bellaston and her Coadjutrix Mrs. Western. And, tho' it is probable, had Honour been provided for amongst the other Brides, her Tongue and her Pen had judged it most prudent to remain filent, she convinced her Correspondents both of her Capacity and her Diligence in the Work of Defamation and Family Trouble. Therefore

gob The History of Tom Jones Book III, fore it was agreed to fend her the following Instructions, inclosed in a Parcel by the Stage Coach.

To Mrs. Honour, nat Squire Western's, with our Corresponder sra Dan eternal Secret.

We approve of your wife Conduct, in

My faithful Girl, I vas garavoolib to

in the late Transactions in your i WE thank you for so convincing a Proof of Attachment to our Intereft, as appears from yours of the 7th Instant.—Nothing could give us more · Pleasure.—Be watchful,— steady,—reso-' lute.— You have nothing to fear, nor to expect, from that Quarter; - you are convinced that I told you Truth,-You are ' neglected. Your Virtue will be a certain Obstacle to your Advancement, amongsta Crew whose Affections are placed on a Baftard ; - whose Counsels are guided by a Bastard .- When a Bastard is at the Head of a Family, who can expect its Favours, but Whores and Fools, Dupes to his Passions, and Cloaks to his Shame, as you have rightly observed in ' your Letter? Stoop not to their Ways · -Set their House in a Flame, - and if it should prove too hot for yourself,-if any unlucky Accident should bring you under

Ch. 9

" und

fait

our

· We

' not

· W

wa!

· La

the

thr

you

by

in

po

-15

1

wi

fo

m pl

br

tl

· ru

· he

. 3

Ch. 9. in bis MARRIED STATE. 307.

under Suspicion, flee away by its Light.

· - I have always a fafe Retreat for my

faithful Servants.

Weboth enjoin you once more to keep our Correspondence an eternal Secret. We approve of your wife Conduct, in ' not discovering any Dislike or Discontent ' in the late Transactions in your Family.— We advise you even to double your outward Regard to your Master and your Lady, and your Felicitation towards their Favourites :- fuch a Behaviour will throw them off their Guard, and give you a greater Opportunity to fet them by the Ears.—Whatever it may cost you in Submissions, Patience, and Flattery, if possible, gain their Confidence, - and there is no Doubt but we shall gain our End. - Where Interests appear to clash, Envy will produce Circumstances we cannot foresee: - And if you play your Cards right, my Girl, we are fatisfied, it is possible to play Them one against another; and to bring in the World to help us to baste that Jones, who would not scruple to ' ruin us all.— If possible, create a Jealousy between Supple and his Wife; you know ' her Character, and her Familiarities with ' Jones at the Inn in Gloucestersbire, which

308 The History of Tom Jones Book III. we suppose Supple is not acquainted with. -She is an artful Huffy, you must be very much upon your Guard with her .-She certainly would be glad to enjoy Jones privately, now he has heaped such Favours upon her, whom she so easily admitted ' into her Embraces, as an entire Stranger. " -You must feed her Expectations .- Tell her there is not that Harmony between ' your Master and Mistress, as usual: -· That he has frequently talked to you with particular Satisfaction of Mrs. Waters: -That a Correspondence might be carried on between them with the utmost Secrefy:—That she is deserving of a much brighter Husband than Supple, who does not feem capable of ever making a Woman happy in a Family: and, in fine, that you are ready and willing to enter into any Measures that Time, Opportunity, and Inclination shall suggest to throw her into a perpetual Union with Mr. · Jones .- This will certainly footh her Temper and Constitution ; - she is a Jilt in Nature, - and what is bred in the Bone, is seldom got out of the Flesh.-Only set her in Motion, and never fear, ' fhe will presently begin to despise her · Husband; — try every Means to recommend her Person; - throw herself in

Ch.

· 701

' int

e gel

·He

e the

tio

and

T

rac

16

· yo

" ap

c cc

4 m

· h

· lo

· y

c m

· y

n

· to

· h

c t

· f

. (

· r

· Fones's

Ch. 9. in bis MARRIED STATE. 309
' Jones's Way; — dress, flaunt, and run

into a hundred little Extravagancies, fuc-

gested by a weak, conceited, amorous

Heart, which at once will expose her to

the Public; — draw upon her Imputations, — and awaken the Attention of her

' Husband, to inspect into her Behaviour,

and to suspect her Fidelity to his Bed.

Then a little Matter will make the Man

' rack himfelf with the tormenting Be-

· lief, that he is a Cuckold.

d

u

r

This we look upon as the chiefest Point 'you are to labour: for, there does not appear so much Difficulty to introduce a contentious Jealousy into Partridge's Fa-' mily.—He is an old Fellow, compared to his Bride: and they presently grow yel-' low, upon the first Appearances of a ' young Wife's Courtefy to a young Gentle-' man.—And as for Molly, she lies open to ' your Management,— she has given too ' many Proofs of her Experience of a Man, to be fully fatisfied with one older than ' her Father. - No Wonder, as you write, ' the Country suspects her still to be kept ' for your Master's Use .- Nourish this 'Opinion with a smiling Acknowledge-' ment, whereever you hear it infinuated; ' -and, if you are pressed to declare your Mind, 310 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

Mind, confirm the Report with a farcastical Negative. faying, It does not become

me to speak,—Servants are obliged to

keep Family Secrets: But,— if I durst:

However it is none of my Business.

• And such broken Speeches will gain more

Credit, and do more Mischief, than even

· if you should positively avouch the Fact.

By these Means, Honour, you will be

able to revenge yourfelf and us upon the Bastard your Master, without scarce even

appearing in it, if you manage right.—

First of all, make Waters and Seagrim

e jealous of each other, in regard to the

Favours expected from Jones.—Be al-

ways infinuating to each of them sepa-

rately, that nothing retards a Demonstra-

tion of the Truth of your Suggestions,

but the partial Love you discover in him

for her Rival; we know how far our

· Sex will engage in fuch a Fray.— They

will foon grow clamorous, and fruitful

in their Inventions to befpatter them-

felves .- They will improve every Re-

port to the Difadvantage of each other,

"—and help you to Aspersions which

on nothing but Jealoufy can invent.—Thus

' armed with public Report and their Im-

' prudences, take the Advantage of your

· Lady's

Ch.

· La

· alo

'ba

the

· W

Di

lin

the

de

CO

e an

c tro

· m

' ly

· ni

· C

W

pl

' ti

· F

· I

' e

5 C

· I

li

th

of

Ch. 9. gin bis MARRIED STATE. 311 Lady's Toilet, and Leisure Hours, when alone at your Needle Work. Throw in the Cenfure of the World upon her Hufband's Behaviour, in regard to these Women, by Way of Diversion, and very tenderly at first; and, by Way of Disdain, against the Contrivers and Publishers of fuch idle Stories .- If she pays the least Regard, or shews the least Inclination to hearken to fuch Reports,defend your Master's Innocence :- But condemn the Women of bad Defigns,and support your Opinion with a Retrospect upon their former Lives and Familiarities with him.—If she enters deeply into their Characters, you may be fure of ruining them in your Mistress's Opinion,—and, first craving Pardon for your 'Concealment of what you was afraid would not help but trouble her, tell her plainly of their Inclinations and Expectations; and fhe is Woman enough to apply them to her own Disquiet, and to her ' Husband's Misconduct and Disadvantage. This will lay her quite open to admit whatever shall feed her Jealousy; and she will like you the better, during the Predominans cy of this Passion, should you give her any Hints to excuse such a pernicious Suspicion against her Husband. I need not

' remind

10

0

re

n

t.

le

n

n

r

312 The History of Tom Jones Book III.

' remind you what to add upon the Occa-

fion. - You know what passed between

' you and Jones, just after our first Meet-

ing.— I am not concerned for the Conse-

quences to which it may expose me to,

even if you tell all you heard behind his

Bed; provided you do but add, by Way

of Sample of his roving Affections, the

e real or pretended Attempts made by him

upon your Virtue. - But, whatever Con-

fessions you make, seal them with Tears

in Abundance, to manifest your Love for

vour Mistress, and Detestation of her

Husband's Crime.

barre

Religiously observe your Vow; departs not a Tittle from these Directions, if

· Circumstances will bear you out; regard

not Consequences; and inform us, by

every Opportunity, what Progress you

' make .- You will find inclosed a Piece of

Gold, and fome other small Pledges of

our Regard for your Services, who am

and service of a company of a standard or a

and the property of the state o

Your assured Friend,

BELLASTON.

CHAP.

Ch.

Ma

dra was thre Squ lou An

his Glov of

kin

AE

he to

Sou ver

mo

cur Clo

CHAP. X

Madam Jones's Jealousy, and the Plot, which occasioned it, discovered.

y

1

S

r

f

RS. Honour so artfully executed the Intrigue, as, in a short Time, to draw them all into her Snare. Every Mouth was open, amongst both gentle and simple, throughout the Country, against the young Squire; and each Family raged with Jealoufy, before it once reached his Ears. And as he was all Life, courteous, affable, kind, and off his Guard, every Word and Action was misinterpreted and difforted to his Defamation .- Till, at last, a general Gloominess wherever he appeared, and the lovely Sophia, emaciated with the Anguish of her Soul, awakened his Attention: And he fo affectionately and undifguifedly urged to know the Cause of her Grief, that she, but not without the greatest Emotion of a Soul overwhelmed with Jealoufy, told him very explicitly, that she was become the most miserable of Women,—deceived by him and his Uncle, - made a Tool to fecure to him two vile Prostitutes, under the Cloak of Charity, Justice, and Gratitude, and.

and, in a Word, that he had shared her Bed with Mrs. Waters and Molly Stagrim; of which, she added, the whole Country rings. In a nogural to be added, the whole the stagrim of the mode of begind a prior of the stagrim of the stagri

The Shock, which this Declaration gave Mr. Jones, was so great, that nothing but the most guarded Innocence could have borne up under it. - And he fo affectionately and tenderly vindicated his own Conduct, in every Particular, fince Marriage, that her Tears dried up; her Love and Reason got the better of Jealousy and Passion; and, as in Duty bound, she cast the whole Blame upon the crafty Infinuations of her Maid Honour; whom she, from that Moment, determined to facrifice to her Resentment. But Mr. Jones, penetrating farther into fuch a dark Contrivance to diffurb the Peace of fo many Families, persuaded his dear Sophy to forbear, till he should try to discover the Principals, that fet her on .- She agreed .- Honour was admitted and careffed, as usual, -and, with her Husband's and Uncle Allworthy's Advice, Madam Jones informed her Maid Honour how much fhe was concerned, and the Indignation she had conceived from her Reports against her Husband; and, withch. all, him olat afra her

con

ad . 1 wro kno alre Mr dire was Th upo Ad Ap a b Pa cor the Fa giv wh

Su

Sig

ch. to. in bis MARRIED STATE. 315 all, that she could not forbeat Accusing of him; that he had solemnly afferted his inviolable Fidelity to her Bed; and that she was afraid of being obliged to open her Case to her Aunt Western, and call upon herself to confront him with the Charge.

We want was for great, that nothing be Mrs. Honour, finding herself pushed, wrote immediately to Lady Bellaston, to know how to proceed, Things being brought already to such a Crisis. And my Lady, Mrs. Western being then absent from Town, directed her by the next Post; for, Honour was urgent for her Ladyship's Answer: That, as long as Mrs. Western was pitched upon to be Judge, or at least to be her Niece's Adviser in the Case, she need be under no Apprehensions of Disgrace: But, to put a better Colour upon her Decision, it would be adviseable to corrupt either Supple's or Partridge's Wife with a Sum of Money to corroborate the public Reports, by taxing the other of acknowledging her too great Favours from Mr. Jones, ordering her to give a Draught for 50 l. upon her Banker, which she promised should be paid upon Sight.

Mr. Allworthy, who entertained the like Suspicions, as his Nephew did, of a Con-P 2 spiracy,

316 The History of Tom Jones Book III. spiracy in this Affairs had ordered Mrs. Honour to be stoictly watched; and that all Perfons and Letters, lenguiring or directed for her, should be brought before him. He was prefently informed of her fending a Letter by Post, just before those Orders given in the Family, and by the fame Conveyance expected a Reply that might help them to unfold fo villainous a Scheme.-But, when the Postman delivered to his Hands the above from Lady Bellaston, whom they had never suspected; what Amazement appeared in every Face! What Surprize to think one in her Character and Station of Life, at least, should contrive and abet Mischief, for Mischief Sake! A Friend! a Relation! one, whom all the Family of the Westerns had always treated with the greatest Distinction! to follicit, and, as it appears, even to contrive their Discontent and Destruction, threw them into the utmost Consternation; which was not a little augmented by the dark Hints given in it of Mrs. Western. min mild of morning of a color of

However, armed with this Proof of the Conspiracy, Mr. Allworthy, attended by his Nephew and Niece, sent a proper Officer to bring Mrs. Honour before his Worfhip, in a legal Manner, as a Justice of Peace,

Pea her wa! wa enc to faic rot ter the to ph op all pr In Fa Ju an

as

VO

die

Tu

fo

an

tr

be

da

th

la

Ch

Ch. 10. in his MARRIED STATE. 217 Peace, upon a Complaint made against her, for certain Mildemeanors. The Fact was too plain to be denied. The Letter was produced. Yet she had Confidence enough to urge her own Innocence, and to plead that whatever she had done, or faid, was in Love to her Lady, and a thorough Belief of what was laid to her Mafter's Charge. But as this did not fatisfy the discerning Justice, and helped rather to inrage than affwage the innocent Nephew, she was told that nothing but an open, free, and unreserved Confession of all the Persons and Particulars she was privy to, in this hellish Plot against the Innocence and Peace of her Master and his Family, could prevent the most rigorous Justice the Law would inflict upon such an Offender, who must be looked upon as the Principal, so long as she endeavoured to skreen her Accomplices. Nor. did this Declaration, from the Mouth of the Justice, bring her to Confession. And therefore it was thought proper to fend for, and examine Mrs. Supple and Mrs. Partridge a-part privately, to fee if there could be gathered from their Words any Foundation for an Attempt to engage either of them in the Way directed by Lady Bellaston; and, at the same Time, not doubting to find more Letters on the Subject, it was concluded necessary to examine the Trunks, Pockets, see of the Prisoner. By which Means, they recovered Lady Bellaston's first Letter, which unravelled the whole Secret; set every Body right; and brought the artful Chamber maid to an explicit Confession of the whole Affair from the Beginning.

The Prospect of the Danger, in which to many were concerned, was viewed with Horror. The Difcovery was made as public as possible. The deceived Women were confounded at their own Credulity; and mutually, and together begged Pardon of each other, and of their generous Benefactors, for hearkening to, and not revealing fuch scandalous Infinuations: And Mrs. Honour was obliged to find Security for her good Behaviour, and Appearance, when it should please the injured Persons to prosecute Lady Bellafton, at a proper Time. And Mr. Jones, to express his thorough Contentment in the Enjoyment of fo amiable a Lady, and his Approbation of a retired Life, took her by the Hand, and congratulated her in the Words of the Poet:

Retir'd

Retir'd, we tread a smooth and open Way;.
Thro' Briars and Brambles, in the World
but boxwestray; and Brambles, in the World

Stiff Opposition, and perplex d Debate,

And thorny Care, and rank and stinging

Which choak our Paffage, our Career con-

And wound the firmest Temper of the Soul.

O facred Solitude! divine Retreat!

Choice of the Prudent! Envy of the Great!

By thy pure Stream, or in thy waving

Shade.

We'll court fair Wifdom, that celestial Maid:

The genuine Offspring of whose lov'd Embrace,

(Strangers on Earth!) are Innocence and Peace:

There; from the Ways of Men laid safe ashoar,

We'll smile to hear the distant Tempest roar.

There, blest with Health, with Business unperplext,

This Life we'll relish, and ensure the next.

Leadelday of the control and

320 The History of TOM JONES Book III.

CHAP. XI.

Shewing how far Scandal is serviceable to Barbers, Apothecaries, and Physicians; which may serve to conclude this Part of the History.

6

de

th

d

THE whole Country was immediately informed of this Discovery; yet, it was not so implicitly received by all, as to root it out of every Mind. Nay, the Tea-tables, which had been employed for two Months together, to whifper about the Imputation, and to bemoan Miss Sopbia's fad Fortune; or had treated her with Disdain for marrying a Man, of whom she had fuch Proofs of his Incontinency; were rather inclined to acquit Mrs. Honour, &c. than to acquiesce in the Proceedings against her: Some of the old Maids, that remembered the Foundling in the Justice's Bed, and how tender he was towards Jenny Jones, its reputed Mother; failed not to recount this History, and to accuse him of Partiality, for punishing a poor Maid-fervant so severely for detecting her Master's Whoredoms and Adulteries, when he not only let a Whore go off fcot-free, but provided for her Bastard, as if it had been his own Child.— ' Ha! faid they, there is more · Truth

Ch. II. in bis MARRIED STATE 321

Truth in this Affair, than we can dive into;—where there is Smoke, there must be some Fire.—The poor Girl has only blown the Coals too soon,—Might will

dent, or less splenetic, chose to suspend their Opinions: Yet, each Way, this innocent Family became the Diversion and Ridicule of their Neighbours.

If the Barber was called to shave at the next Inn, he entertained his Customer with the Oddity of this Affair, and fent it halftold on Horse-back to the next Stage. The Apothecary, who always carries a Budget of Novelties to edulcorate his bitter Medicines, and to add Value to his tedious Visits, dispersed this Incident in such various Mixtures, that it either ferved for a Laugh or a Pun, or a serious Text against Adultery, or against Scandal and Defamation. Nay, the very Physician, after feeling the Pulfe, made Use of this Story to fill up the Time necessary for his Chariot to stand at a Patient's Door; while the deceived Multitude without were admiring his Diligence and Care in confulting, as they vainly supposed, the Patient's Welfare. And at last he discovered it an excellent

g22 The History of Tom Jones Book III. lent Recipe to recommend himself amongst the Ladies, by lulling their Distemper asseep with a Dish of Scandal.

W

T

311

T

But, be this as it will, Lady Bellaston finding herself indited at the King's-Bench Bar, for aiding, abetting, and contriving this Act of Defamation and Scandal, we are informed it will come on next Term. And I think it is Time to retire from this Theatre of Envy, with the Words of the Poet.

The CONCLUSION.

Fools gaze, and envy; Envy darts a Sting, Which makes a Swain as wretched as a King;

I envy none their Pageantry and Show, I envy none the Gilding of their Woe.

Give me, indulgent Gods! with Mind fe-

And guiltless Heart, to range the sylvan Scene.

No splendid Poverty, no smiling Care, No well-bred Hate, or servile Grandeur there.

Say, dear Hippolytus (whose Drink is Ale, Whose Education is a Christmas Tale; Whose

Ch. 11. in bis MARRIED STATE. 323
Whose Mistress is saluted with a Smack,
And Friend receiv'd with Thumps upon
the Back)
Thy pleasing Objects useful Thoughts suggest,
Thy Sense is ravish'd, and thy Soul is
blest.

FINIS.

are interned at will come on next berns.

Theatre of Have, with the Words of the

And Learney is Time to retire from



HISTORY OF THE

FOM FONES

ouliaduuo



BIR Wi

and so ear

AN

ADDITIONAL CHAPTER.

Containing many romantic Truths and suitable Reflections on the Genius of some of our frenchified Nobility, and their dear Creatures the Actors in the Hay-market.

Tittle-tattle, which so lavishly entertained the Public with Conjectures on the Characters of Mr. Jones and the Parties concerned to blast his Reputation. The Mail was no sooner opened, but, like a Pot of wild Fire, it diffused such a Flame all over the Country, against certain Persons they had never heard of before, that every Tongue thought itself obliged to arm itself in Desence of their Country, of their Wives and Children, and of their very Religion and Property, against the Invasion of a whole House-ful of mimical Original Present

FRENCH Mendicants; not so much for what is to be dreaded from the Power of this despicable Company, as all the Letters informed us; but for what the Nation has to fear from the Confequences of permitting fo meagre a Crew to encamp or fettle in the Hay-market, within the very Air of St. Fames's; because, as it is to the pestilent Blast of the South-East Wind, that the Ukrain, many Parts of Hungary, Poland, Germany, &c. owe their Misfortunes, the Destruction of their Corn, and other Provisions for Man and Beast, by driving amongst them the formidable Armies of Locusts, of which we have been so often told fuch terrible Things; it is advised, that as these French Mimicks being driven into the Heart of the British Metropolis, by a South-East Wind also, and are as meagre and voracious as any of those other Animals; there is great Reason to apprehend our whole Nation will be foon overspread with the like Vermin, if we do not unite to destroy, or at least to repulse this first Detachment from the main Body, ready to pass the Channel, upon the first Notice of Victory, or undiffurbed Poffession. For their Performances, without mentioning the Charge that fuch a profligate Set of Men must bring upon any People, are calculated

to poison the Understanding, to introduce new Vices, to ridicule our holy Religion, to misrepresent our Laws and Liberties, and to propagate Disaffection to a Protestant King, and to blow the Coals of Riot and Sedition.

Rage and Resentment appeared in every Countenance; though there did not want a Set of Men who are always in Opposition to public Opinion. Different Classes, according to Custom, maintain and encourage different Ideas, different Opinions, and different Views and Interests.

In comes Squire Western, with his Pipe in one Hand, a Weekly Journal in the other, and Cheeks pussed with certain Tokens of Disdain, with Apprehensions of immediate Danger to the Constitution; and with Resolutions to engage his Family to the Service of his Countrymen against ALL Vagabonds and Strollers. Ready to burst with Indignation, he roared like a Madman; but at last, moderating his Passion, so as to be articulately understood, 'Blood' and Z—ds, said he, Jones, we are e-very Zoul lost and undone! Zee here! Volks may talk vat they will; this Paper

will inform thee, that we have more to

fear from the French, than zome imagine. ' Allworthy wan't believe it; but I'm most s zure our 'States must maintain those · French strolling Begars, if they come and kick, and fkip, and mimic, and play all their Beggar-Tricks before our Tenants Wives and Daughters; and it is no News for our young Volks to be ruined by a French Commodity. I'll zend to the whole Bench of Justices, to order all the Constables to take 'um all up, if they ' stroll thur Ways. Zee what the Jour-' nal zays:— Could you think it?' 'The true Patriots of Britain, to shew the · World their Politeness, and the Superiority of their Taste and Understanding, have not only inscribed their kind Invitation and Confent, but also their Purses, to bring over, support, and maintain a Parcel of half-starved French Com-" Com-Comedians, who are now landed, Alamode de France, with servile Hypoerify, gaudy Outfides, meagre Faces, 'impudent Airs, empty Pockets, and damned keen Stomachs to fnap the Bread out of our poor Countrymen's Mouths, and cram it into their own.' - By Jupiter, a new French Invasion! A Plot, Jones! A Plot to ruin our Laws, our Religion,

and our Morals.' But-

Mr.

fu

m

Mr. Western was going on, when the Appearance of Mr. Allworthy in some Measure checked his Resentment, and gave a more grave Turn to the present Discourse. For, being apprized of the Indignation, with which Mr. Western had inveighed against the French Comedians, and their Abettors, Mr. Allworthy pulled out a Letter, which he had just received by the same Post, containing, amongst other Particulars, the following Lines:

- Every Body is exceedingly delighted with his Majesty's most gracious Speech from the Throne.—But an unlucky Accident, this Week in the Hay-market, has raifed a general Clamour against my L-C-for granting a Licence; and against some Persons of Quality, for not only fubscribing, but in a forceable Manner supporting the Performance of a few French Buffoons, who have opened the Theatre, so often denied to a Company of our own People. The Fray began upon the Pit's shewing a Dislike in the ordinary Way of Hissing at Dramatic Performances, when they do not please the Generality of those, who are present. The Audience nofooner fignified their Dislike in this com-Q 3 mon

mon Method, but a noble D- of H-, a noble M. of G—, and a Right Hon. L. V—c. of T—, animated by two or three factious, fome fay, *Popilo* Ladies, and by the Favours expected from the Conquests to be made on the Affections of Madamoiselle—, and —, and —, fallied from the Boxes, and furrounded with a Mob of Bully-Champions, pre-armed with Clubs, they, with Sword in Hand, attacked the defenceless Critics, and obliged them either to approve by their Silence what they condemned in their Judgment, or to quit their Seats and the House, for which they had paid a valuable Confideration. And what has ftill raifed the Clamour more; and engaged the Attention of fome, who perchance would never have troubled their Heads about a Playhouse-Disturbance; is, the calling in of a military Power, and giving the Soldiers peremptory and articulate Command to run the first Person through the Body with their Bayonets, that should dare to interrupt their darling Performance.- People in Town reason variously about this theatrical Proceeding.— I am afraid it will create much ill Blood; and, it may be, adminifter Imputations on the Great and the Innocent, who disapprove whatever disturbs public

pu the rec

tic

6

•

. .

.

4

c tain

public Harmony, as much as you and I; though I cannot help blaming all Force for rectifying Abuses, which can, and ought to be impleaded at the Bar of Justice.—

Mr. Allworthy, having read this Part of his Letter, proceeded with these Observations: ' How difficult is it, faid he, for Men in high Stations to conduct themfelves to the Satisfaction of their Inferiors? · Faction, Envy, Ambition, Interest, and ' Ignorance are continually engaged to dif-'turb their Quiet. Here we find a military Force called in to keep the Peace (as, no Doubt, it was described to the commanding Officer that detached them) represented as an oppressive Nusance; and perchance, with some Reflections on the supreme Power, had the Soldiers been guilty of any Irregularity. Had they onot much better have applied to the Lee gislative Power, if they thought their Liberties were infringed or in Danger, than to feek Redress in a tumultuous 4 Manner, which feldom ends without Mifchief and Oppression on one Side. The bad Consequences of these Indiscretions are too frequent to need any Example in private Life; and the fatal End of Cap'tain Porteus at Edinburgh, and of the late unhappy Youth, Bosavern Penlez, at London, should be lasting Cautions both to the Public, how they precipitately attempt to redress their Grievances in a riotous Manner; and to the Soldiery, how they indiscreetly, wantonly, and upon civil Occasions, exercise that Power, which is given to them only to keep the Peace, and to bring those to Justice that cannot otherwise be apprehended.

· Certainly, those noble Personages could onot be ignorant of this. But what will ' not a vicious Conversation engage a Man in? There is no Reasoning with a de-' praved Will. When GRACE is degene-' rated into Vice, and ferves only to skreen the most abandoned of Men from the just Deferts of a Malefactor: When Honour ' is only supported by Title, and prostituted to conceal Diforder and Falshood; and when a young Man, and Guardian of our Liberties, is arrived to that Pitch of Stupidity, as to forfeit his Interest in the · Esteem of his Fellow-Subjects, in Order ' to gain the Character of a Guardian and Supporter of a foreign viperous Brood of French Strollers, whose Perfection exerts itself in Grimace, Hypocrify, and · the

• 5

e u

· q

P

· fo

6 been

the Propagation of Luxury, and every

evil Work: I say, when this is the Case

of any one, Precept takes no Place, Ex-

ample is contemned, and Admonition is

rejected.

' I think myself happy in the Enjoyment of an Heir, who promiseth so fairly to avoid the Rocks, on which these have split. For such a one, nothing can be too advantageous. I was formerly acquainted with young T's Father,— he is a Man of good Sense:—Oh! how it must grieve him to have fuch a foolish Son? What a Figure must he cut at the Br-ish A-m-l-y-Board, that had Courage to draw his Sword, or to abet such a pre-' judged Action, in Defence of a French Comedy, within the Horizon of St. fames's? The M. of G. is more pardonable, he had nothing to stake but his Constitution, which, with his H-r, has been e upon the Decay for a long Time, if not quite broken. And as to the other Hero, both his private and public Vices have proved him graceless for many Years: Nor is there any Sign of his Reformation, fo long as he delights fo much in French ' Commodities at Home, and Italian Air

' Abroad; which, for 150 Years past, have

been the Ruin of the old English Consti-

tutions and Morals of our Nobility and

Gentry.

· Sopby! I cannot but remember upon this Occasion, how justly you exclaimed at the luscious, immodest, bawdy Expressions and Actions on the Stage, when ' you was at London; you then protested ' against all such Diversions. What would ' you have faid, my Girl, had you been ' Witness of this vicious and corrupt Taste of the Age, which, not content with what ' you condemned, endeavours to introduce foreign Indecencies, to countenance, or to heighten that Luxury, which was always despised and kept out by our Forefathers; which debases the Soul, impoverisheth the Mind; lays the Foundation of every Disease, both in Body and Soul; creates Want in the Midst of Plenty; converts all the Bleffings of Life into ' Curses; crops the beauteous Flower of Life before its Time; devours human · Health and Happiness; intoxicates the ' Soul; chills and benumbs every rifing ' Virtue; brings in Pains and Poverty; and, what is worst of all, a Luxury, which debaseth and bartereth away the Gold and · Treasure of our Country for strange Fol· lies; which is calculated to transfer the Wealth of the Nation to enrich the strolling Vagabonds of our implacable Enemy, the faithless French, who are subtly sent, and politically imported to impoverish both our Minds and Purses. Would it onot be a very romantic Figure to de-' scribe a Legislator, who dresses like a Girl, who smells like a Civet Cat; whose ' very Words are female, and his Gesture ' of the doubtful Gender; who plumes ' himself upon the Taylor's Art, and, like ' a stinking Peacock, spreads his gaudy Fea-' thers; whose Knowledge is the newest ' Mode, and highest Ambition is the most admired Dress? Yet, if my Letter does ' not misinform me, these are the Beaus and Guardians of the new Cargo of French ' Cooks, that are imported to vitiate those ' few English Hearts, which have escaped the Poison that Nation long ago introduced into our Kitchins, to the Ruin, and, I may add, the entire Extinction of ' most of our brave and noble Families. ' Next Post, I expect, will bring us further ' Particulars, which I shall not fail to com-' municate at a proper Time; and shall

only defire you to observe the ill Tendency of all Means to propagate Luxury amongst any People: It stupisies the

· Senses.

Senses, and makes Men tame, and fit for

Slavery; it bows their Minds, and causes

them to stoop, like Asses, to receive the

flavish Burden, and basely to court the Iron-rod of arbitrary Power; and with

· her Twin-fifter Corruption, it has always

been the Bane of the greatest States and

· Empires: For where Luxury and Cor-

ruption are permitted to take Root, flou-

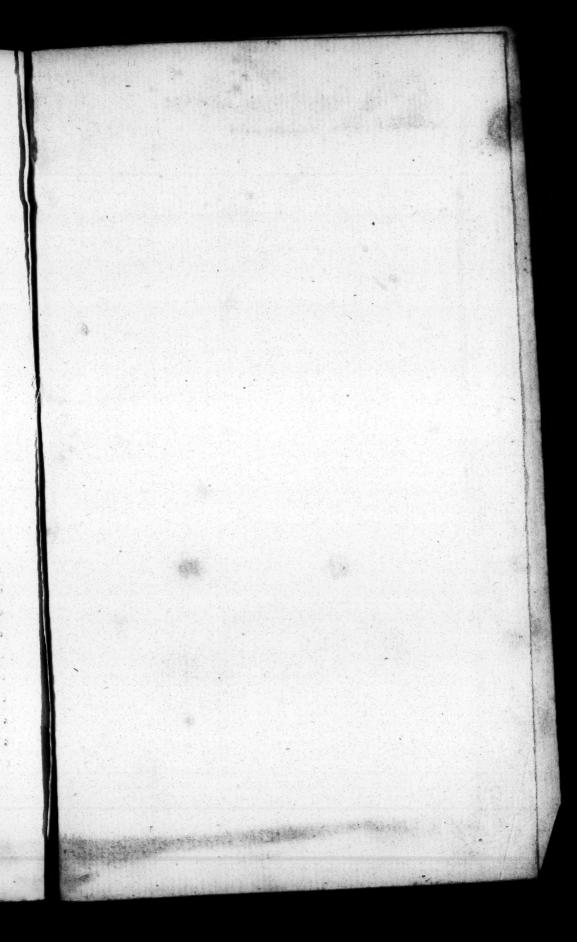
rish and be promoted, Truth and Virtue must decay, and all Rule and Govern-

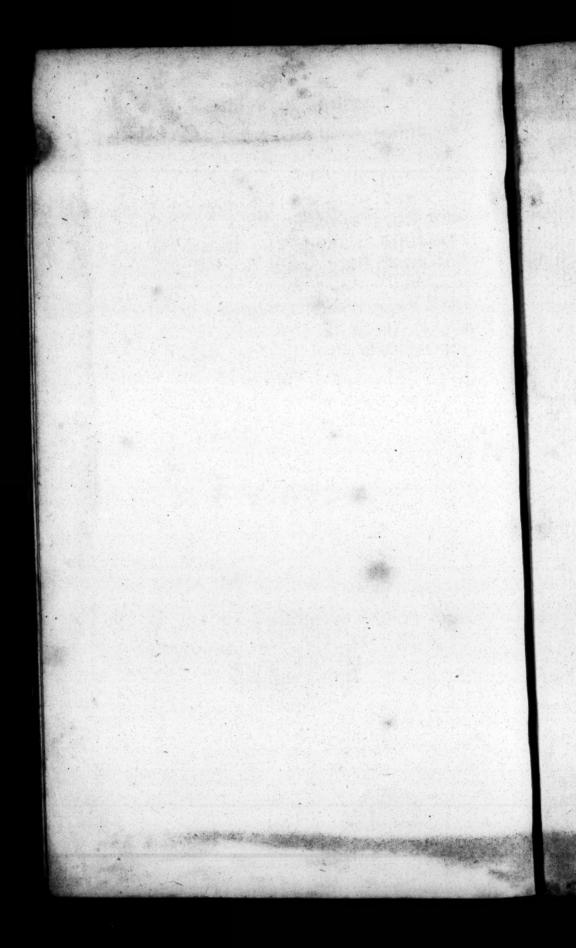
ment must be abrogated.'

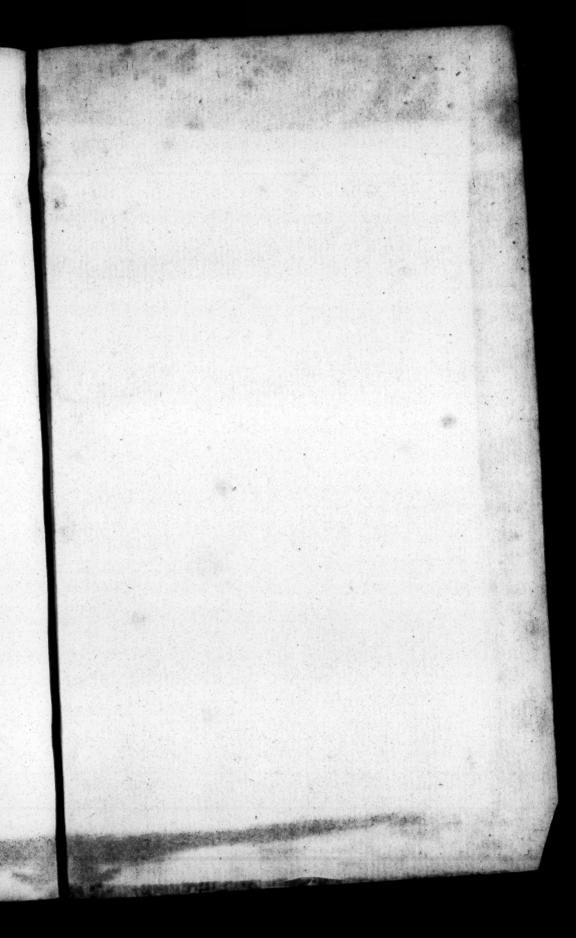
FINIS.











C143.93.

M; Careus

